Advanced Genealogical Research

by Archibald F. Bennett

$2.75

THE G. W. GOODMAN'S
1800 McClellan Drive
Klamath Falls, Oregon

ADVANCED GENEALOGICAL RESEARCH

By ARCHIBALD F. BENNETT

The need for specific guidance in American genealogy research is becoming acute with the passage of time. As available records become more plentiful, there is a widespread demand for actual examples of how to use these records in both finding and proving lineal connections with forefathers. It is hoped that this volume will help meet this urgent need.

Advanced Genealogical Research provides an intelligent background for research efforts by analyzing the historical setting and the pathways of settlement of our American civilization. It explains the technique of gathering and verifying genealogical facts from original sources and emphasizes the importance of tracing clues that will lead to an authentic genealogy.

Actual case histories are cited to show how the family genealogis may analyze and solve puzzling problems confronted in genealogical research. This book contains an excellent summary on how to assemble all available information on the earliest family settler in America and how to determine the location of his European home.

Advanced Genealogical Research is another contribution to the field of genealogical literature by Archibald F. Bennett — a man with vast experience and who is highly qualified to speak on this subject.

BOOKCRAFT, INC.
SALT LAKE CITY, UTAH

ADVANCED GENEALOGICAL RESEARCH

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2022 with funding from
Kahle/Austin Foundation

https://archive.org/details/advancedgenealog0000arch

THE PIONEER MOTHER

ADVANCED GENEALOGICAL RESEARCH

By

ARCHIBALD F. BENNETT

Secretary and Librarian

of

The Genealogical Society

at

Salt Lake City, Utah

BOOKCRAFT INC.

SALT LAKE CITY, UTAH

Copyright
Bookcraft Inc.
1959

Lithographed in U.S.A.
by
PUBLISHERS PRESS
Salt Lake City, Utah

PREFACE

The need for specific guidance in American research for ancestors is becoming ever more insistent and pressing. As available records become more plentiful there is a widespread demand for actual examples and explanations of how to use these records to find and prove lineal connections with forefathers. This volume, it is hoped, will help to meet this urgent need.

First, it endeavors to provide an intelligent background for research efforts, by giving a proper understanding of the historical setting, the pathways of settlement, the caliber and stamina of the frontiersmen and colonizers, the perils they encountered, the solid foundations they laid for our American civilization.

Second, it stresses the technique of gathering and verifying genealogical facts from original, dependable sources. It emphasizes the importance of valid clues, and how these may be used as stepping stones to lead to facts. The brief case histories provide actual experiences to show how clues can be recognized even when the problem seems hopeless, to guide to sources which will furnish the evidences required for an authentic genealogy.

Third, typical problems of particular difficulty because of the lack of vital truths to guide the researcher have been analyzed, and each step taken to arrive at the desired solution has been carefully followed. Indications are given how the family genealogist may similarly analyze and solve his puzzling problems, which may bear similarity to those presented in the text.

Fourth, this course builds upon the foundation of introductory courses in genealogy previously published,

and should present actual and practical research situations which may confront even the experienced genealogical researcher. An endeavor has been made to select examples of families that lived in various parts of the United States and Canada, from the eastern seaboard to the western coast, and the use of original records in various foreign languages.

Finally, the last two chapters indicate how all available information about the earliest family settler in America should be assembled and studied, and how his European home may be determined.

Archibald F. Bennett

CONTENTS

PAGE

Chapter 1 VISITING RELATIVES 13

Everyone has relatives. How numerous they are. Relatives are interesting people. Enjoyable family visits recalled. Ways of locating interested kinsmen. Advantages of a personal visit. Things to avoid. A friendly and tactful approach. Helping one another. More blessed to give. Devices for recording. United effort in further research.

Chapter 2 VERIFYING YOUR CONNECTIONS 24

The need for absolute accuracy. Contributing causes to error. Distorted family traditions. Fickle memories. Faultiness of hearsay. What is valid proof? Checking connecting links. Finding all members of a family. Testing the truth of conclusions. Proof required by hereditary societies.

Chapter 3 FROM CLUES TO CERTAINTY 34

Hopeless problems without clues. Ability to recognize a clue. The detective instinct. Clues may lead to further facts. Searching all the sources. Cases of conflicting evidence. Placing a proper value on evidence. Judging the case impartially. When a case is proved. The satisfaction of certainty. Fair explanations of inferred relationships.

Chapter 4 THE HISTORICAL BACKGROUND 45

The drama of human life. Family happenings and historical movements. Colonial settlements. Tendency to move west. The Scotch-Irish migration. Hardy frontiersmen. Settling the wilderness. Man-made obstacles. Blazing new trails. Indian attacks. Captives among the Indians. History lights the path of the genealogist. Be a well informed student of history.

Chapter 5 PATHS OF MIGRATION 56

Seaboard settlements. The migration of peoples. Impassable mountain barriers. Waterways as Highways. Cumberland Gap. Routes from New England. Great migration trails. Conditions of pioneer life. Mormon pioneers and colonizers. Strength from struggle.

Chapter 6 IN WAR AND IN PEACE 68

The Mohawk Valley. English settlements in Canada. New Englanders move westward. Virginia land bounties. Settlements by families of soldiers. Peace treaties erase barriers. Seeking a landed domain. The California gold rush. Industrialization of quiet areas. Modern travel facilities. The microfilming of records.

Chapter 7 ENRICHING A MEAGER RECORD 82

Mere statistical genealogies. The bane of brevity. Greater accuracy from greater detail. Adding life and human interest. Persecution of the Huguenots. An attempted escape. The "Little Night-Cap." Off to the New World. The family of Susanne Rochet.

Chapter 8 HEROISM ON THE FRONTIER 95

The lives of intrepid souls. Living in constant peril. A hairbreadth escape. Attack on the Hall family. A noble character. Legacy left by daring pioneers. Small opportunity for record keeping. Caliber and stamina of the first settlers.

Chapter 9 NOTABLE MEMBERS OF THE FAMILY 105

Some facts on kinship. The lineage of Sir Walter Scott. Numerous posterity of a colonial settler. A mother of statesmen. A family of great leaders. Going back one generation. Posterity of a western pioneer. What you may contribute to posterity.

Chapter 10 BARRIERS OVERCOME 116

The pioneer spirit in research. Typical barriers in the genealogical quest. Intermarriages among the Loyalists. Effect of systematic and thorough searching. Help from a cousin. Family connections from land grants. Planning for success. Knowing the sources available. War and the separation of families. Using all the sources.

Chapter 11 "BORN IN OHIO" 128

Tracing families from West to East. Help from a family genealogy. Aid from a pension record. A will and cemetery records. Another case of "Born in Ohio." Limitations in American census records. A helpful genealogical query. Biography from a county history. A will in York Co., Pa.

Chapter 12 THE RECORDS ARE ALL BURNED 139

The finality of total destruction of records. Tendency to discourage ourselves. What other records survived? A problem in Northumberland Co., Va. Later court records that were preserved. English ancestry found. Entries from a parish register. Resume of steps taken. County records destroyed. A special statute. Family Bibles and family papers. Personal knowledge of relatives.

Chapter 13 USE OF LAND RECORDS 149

Importance of knowing the place of residence. Landed possessions locate residence. A deed gives a wife's name. Rowan County land entries. The Land Law of 1820. Oregon Donation Land Claims. Land grants in California. The Berryessa family. Victims of violence and persecution.

Chapter 14 ESTABLISHING THE LOCATION OF FAMILY HOMES 161

Typical records which aid. Location given in a deed. A clue from vital records. A query in a D. A. R. Magazine. Information from relatives. The ancestry of Alfred Bell. A pension record. Finding other relatives through the D. A. R. Will of Robert Bell in Rowan County. Located by a deed. Clues leading to Pennsylvania. Married in Maryland? A new outlook.

Chapter 15 MISSING MAIDEN NAMES OF MOTHERS 175

The wives of two John Snows. Orphans Court and Deed Records. A journal, a letter and a church book. Two queries and an answer. Nauvoo baptisms for the dead. A pedigree in the Archives. Other clues to maiden names. A printed family genealogy. A "Tough" lineage. Formula for finding maiden names.

Chapter 16 WHAT HAPPENED TO MISSING SONS 186

Kidnapped by the Indians. Lost sons as patriarchs of a numerous progeny. The case of Abraham Neide. Died without issue? Errors corrected by legal evidence. The problem of Jonathan Mead. Located by deeds and census records.

Chapter 17 CHANGES IN FAMILY SURNAMES 197

Constant changes in spelling of surnames. Examples of surname changes. A marvelous lineage. The Windrow-Winters surname. Tendency of spelling to follow the sound. Surname changes among family descendants. Virginia descendants in Brazil.

Chapter 18 A FAMILY RECORD OF DESCENDANTS 211

Two types of family genealogies. The many surnames included in a family. A simple method of recording a family genealogy. Achievements of Col. Stephen Mack. A pioneer widow crosses the plains. A trader among the Indians. Children of an Indian wife. An adequate Index. A Table of Families.

Chapter 19 The First American Ancestor..... 223
Many lines stop with the emigrant ancestor. Clues which may lead to former homes. The ancestry of Mary Sitts. The House Family of the Mohawk. The Walrath Family. The Schaffer Family. Example of a forged connection. The Canova Family of Florida.

Chapter 20 The Family Home in Europe..... 236
The ancestry of Thomas Richards. The ancestry of Robert Pyle. Ancestry traced in Finland. The House of Salazar. The Salazar Coat-of-Arms. A founder of Santa Fe. Clues for Old World research. The English origin of Joshua Wright.

ILLUSTRATIONS

Page

The Pioneer Mother.....Frontispiece
Peter Peterson and Celestia Terry Peterson..... 15
Flatboats on the River 52
Pioneer Train on March to the West..... 64
Monument to Pioneer Lutherans of Williamsburg..... 71
Inscription to Lutheran United Empire Loyalists..... 72
Microfilming for the Genealogical Society..... 80
Lauperswil Village and Church..... 84
Pedigree Chart of Jacques Michaux..... 92
Governor William Hall of Tennessee 97
Mary Isham and Her Descendants.....109
Early Settlers of Williamsburg, Ontario.....121
Loyalists Crossing into Canada.....125
Walter S. Berryessa 155
Capt. Jefferson Hunt of the Mormon Battalion.....162
Amanda Barnes Smith and Her Descendants.....163
Bible Record of William Bell and Sarah McGuire.....168
Frederica W. L. Hofer and Barbara Mirus.....201
Sacajawea and Her Baby Jean Baptiste.....205
Esther Burnett Horne 207
Clarence Fletcher Peacock and Elmo Belmiro Peacock.....210
Almira Mack Covey and Harriet Mack Whittemore.....217
Mary Sitts, Indian Captive and Pioneer Mother.....225
Adaline Canova and Husband, William Henry Chace.....233
Beata Lovisa Abrams Anderson.....240

Chapter 1 •

VISITING RELATIVES

Every person has relatives. He was born with them — *many* of them. During the course of a normal lifetime they will vastly increase in number. Although the expression is sometimes encountered that a certain individual had neither kith nor kin, actually such a thing is utterly impossible. Every living person has literally hundreds of thousands of kinsmen, who trace back to one or another —often to many — of his actual own progenitors.

Examples of this truth could be multiplied. As an individual traces back to his parents, grandparents, great-grandparents, etc., these ordinarily double with each new generation extending further back into the past. In but five generations he would thus have sixteen separate ancestral lines and in ten generations 1,024. By the time thirty-two generations had been traversed, by this mathematical formula one would have the staggering total of 4,294,967,296 direct and lineal ancestors — practically double the total population of the earth today. This could not be true, and in reality is not true, because there were many, many intermarriages among these progenitors on different lines. Over and over again, as one's lineage is traced back, he encounters the self-same ancestral lines because of these intermarriages. He may thus derive from a particular progenitor hundreds of times.

It is a known and acknowledged fact, and one easily demonstrated, that every individual among us has thousands of ancestral lines. Since these earlier progenitors all left posterity, their children and children's children and children's children's children have multiplied by natural process of increase until today they are a veritable host. Thus a person's kindred of not too distant cousinship most assuredly are mingled amongst many, many families of a great variety of surnames, in all ranks of society and in all walks of life.

This fact has a very practical application in genealogical research. No matter which ancestral line you may choose to trace, there are living today, somewhere, numerous relatives who could aid you in your search. Some are well informed on the genealogy of the families close to them, and willing, if rightly approached, to share with you their information. It may be your good fortune to find among these kinsmen some who are skilled and experienced genealogists, who have devoted years of their life in tracing their and your forefathers.

Because of this one of the first rules for genealogical research is to gather all the records possible from relatives — near and remote. They are an ever-existent source of supply; and one not to be ignored. To close your eyes and your mind to this generous source would be foolhardy in the extreme. Friendly approaches should be made to these cousins; friendly contacts should be established.

Relatives Are Interesting People. So much for relatives in the abstract. But relatives are very interesting people, with love and faith in their hearts, with a charming sense of humor, with bodily and human frailties, and often with long and rich and fruitful memories.

Here in Utah on December 11, 1958, Peter Peterson and his good wife Celestia Terry Peterson celebrated their eightieth wedding anniversary. *The Deseret News* on November 26th printed in color the picture of this aged couple in their home in Fairview. They had lived together more than 29,000 days.

> Sitting together at their table by the kitchen range, Mr. and Mrs. Peterson will be looking forward to Dec. 11. On that day they will celebrate their 80th wedding anniversary to become Utah's and probably the nation's longest-wed couple. Their descendants number about 325.
>
> Peter Peterson is 98 years old. His bride is 97. They have been sweethearts since they were 13.
>
> "Remember how we 'cousined' along the way home from St. George after we were married," Mrs. Peterson reminds her husband.

PETER PETERSON AND CELESTIA TERRY PETERSON

By Permission of the Deseret News

"In the days before hotels and motels, travelers stayed with friends, cousins or other relatives along the way. That's how we spent our eight-day honeymoon back in 1878," she recalls.

"I had gone to St. George with my parents to do temple work. For about two months I had been at the home of my uncle, Charles Terry. Peter came down to St. George bringing a wagon load of grain to pay for our wedding trip," she said.

Watching this silver-haired, gracious couple, one wonders how to measure 80 years of marriage.

Is it by the 960 calendar pages that have fluttered away since 1878? Is it by the dozen kisses daily of genuine affection and esteem? Is it by the number of sweet smelling apples and pine cones that have dropped onto the front lawn through all the summers lived in the picturesque old home?

Perhaps the best measure of this couple's 80 years of marriage is in the hosts of friends and in the hundreds of proud descendants that lay claim to a rich heritage of love and devotion.

The wood-burning range in the kitchen is a tangible reminder of the family solidarity that stems from this house where ten sons and daughters grew to maturity. The organ is in the parlor. It's a joyful reminder of family singing and of evenings when Mr. Peterson would play his violin.

A magical sense of humor has added joy to 80 years of marriage. They find, even in the infirmities of age, bits of welcome laughter.

Like the day this autumn when a small granddaughter was asked to pick up the apples which had dropped on the front lawn.

"It would be easier for Grandpa to do it," the tot reasoned. "He's already stooped over."

Seven of their ten children are living. They didn't lose a son or a daughter until after they had celebrated their 66th wedding anniversary.

There are 47 living grandchildren; 156 great-grandchildren and 39 great-great-grandchildren, plus the husbands and wives that have joined the family. It adds up to a total of about 325 persons.

The family tree, with roots in Sanpete County, spreads its branches across many states and into the distant paths of servicemen and missionaries.

As Mr. and Mrs. Peterson sit in front of their fire, they are warmed by their memories. These sons and daughters have a lot to remember.

Just imagine for a moment the rich legacy of experiences and family anecdotes this couple could hand to any of their numerous descendants who may visit them and inquire into the past history of the family. For in previous years they made written records, journals, family Bible records and more recent family genealogies; and need not depend solely on the memory of those nearing one hundred years. Yet what a precious storehouse of family knowledge and family relationships is their unique and lengthy memory reaching so far back into the past!

Enjoyable Family Visits Recalled. Visiting relatives may reveal the warmth and the romance of family history. Looking back through the eyes of memory one can vividly recall visits to kinsmen which were very enjoyable and richly rewarding; like the visit over twenty years ago to Uncle Eli and Aunt Bessie in Burley, Idaho. Even from a sickbed he was happy to give glimpses of the pioneer life of his parents not to be had anywhere else on this earth — vivid details of daily happenings crossing the plains, building a fort for protection against Indian attacks, the coming of Johnston's army, the hordes of crickets devouring the crops, the timely rescue by the heaven-sent sea gulls, the long, hard journeys in winter to obtain a scanty supply of food, sickness, accidents, deaths, marriages of the children, moving to new homes, and all the joy and the hardships, the pathos and the drama of early days. Aunt Bessie added many colorful touches of human interest. Before a year had gone she was in her grave; he followed her shortly. All this would have gone with them had the visit not been made when it was, and the facts written down as they were told.

Aunt Maggie was generously helpful. She had the grandfather's family record, numerous family letters from relatives in the East telling of their families, and a great many photographs of kinsmen. She lived to be ninety and her memory held many a treasured story of earlier days. She was happy to share with others things far more priceless than gold or silver.

It was early morning, scarcely past the breakfast hour; but there was yet a little while before train time. A couple

from another city were passing the home of Uncle Tom, the father's brother. Obedient to a sudden impulse they paid him and his wife a visit. In a friendly atmosphere the conversation drifted naturally to the family genealogy, and his recollections of the earlier generation. He readily recalled facts unknown to them, and these they carefully noted down on paper. By the time the brief and pleasant interview had ended they also had a complete record of his own large family. What a blessing they made the visit! Before long he had departed, and would have taken with him the precious and highly perishable information he alone could so well give. But now it was on record and preserved for posterity.

Ways of Locating Interested Kinsmen. How many Uncle Toms are there in your family, who have the very facts you are eagerly seeking, and are perfectly willing to tell them to you, but who cannot wait forever for you to visit them?

A genuine problem confronting the sincere genealogist is just how to learn who are your relatives who are already interested in the family records and family history. This has been accomplished in a variety of ways. Often their whereabouts has been learned from other known relatives. Each person has his own circle of kindred acquaintances. Frequently the word is passed from family to family that such and such a family member has set about to compile the genealogy. Once you learn of such a gifted person, lose no time in visiting him, if possible, or in writing him if you cannot go personally.

Again, the family genealogist may communicate with you. If he does, be prompt in your cooperation and comply with his request. Keep the line open between you. Many dilatory or indolent ones throw away the opportunity of a lifetime to gain needed genealogical data by failing to respond to such requests or delaying the answer until it is too late. When the results of a lifetime of research are offered you freely, surely you should avail yourself of them with alacrity. Such a privilege may never come to you again.

Aside from assistance from other relatives family genealogists may be located through the files in the Archives of the Genealogical Society in Salt Lake City. On each of the millions of family group records and pedigree charts on file there are listed the name and address of the compiler of that record, and usually the date it was submitted. Next to relatives, the Archives should be the first place to consult.

Other devices are to consult city directories and telephone books. One lady addressed a letter to the postmaster of a large city asking him to place her letter of inquiry in the hands of a certain doctor, whose name she had but not his address. It so happened that the postmaster lived right next door to that doctor, and gave him the letter. This doctor had spent many years in preparing from every available source a record giving the genealogy of the family this lady was seeking. Not only did he provide her with this, but sent her twenty-three volumes of his manuscript which she was permitted to have copied on a typewriter. It is pleasing to note that she in turn sent him three typewritten copies of the manuscript for his own use. Now all the material has been published.

Published genealogical queries in newspapers and magazines are often fruitful of result. One appearing in a Texas publication was read in Utah and answered by one who had access to all the information requested. An inquiry in the *Daughters of the American Revolution Magazine* requested facts about the ancestors of many Utah families of common descent with the person placing the query. Before they could reply the same magazine printed an answer from a distant relative in another state, who sent in entries from the family Bible of their common progenitor, a copy of his will, and a statement of his ancestry. Another query appearing in *The Boston Evening Transcript* brought a letter from a relative in Kansas; and she told of a minister in New York state who was even then in the act of publishing the family genealogy. The querist promptly got in touch with the minister, sending his own part of the family genealogy just in time to have it included in the printed volume. Thereafter the two collaborated wisely in tracing the European ancestry of the immigrant to America.

This experience indicates that a search among published family histories in libraries may also put you in communication with the authors of genealogies on some of your own lines. A resident of Montreal, Canada, printed a brief but valuable history of a certain family, one of those descended from a single immigrant, the only one of that surname in America. Families in the far west saw a book review, wrote to the author, and he presented them with a copy of his book. Their research, carried on independently, added much to what he had on the earlier generations in America. They shared their record with him. Both he and they have benefited from this contact.

Advantages of a Personal Visit. Although these parties keep in communication by correspondence, they have never had the privilege of a personal visit. Yet a personal visit is highly advantageous and much to be desired.

One compiler of a family history stopped off at a little town in Illinois on his return from a trip to the East. He visited the courthouse, while it was still open, and copied wills and deeds and marriage records. Then he inquired for the residences of relatives whose names he had obtained. First he met the great-granddaughter of their common pioneer progenitor. She phoned other relatives. Some of them drove twenty-five miles that evening to see him, bringing with them their records. The family Bible was produced, and he copied the entries verbatim. Best of all, a friendship was formed with these relatives, no longer now utter strangers. For years there followed an exchange of letters and of family facts. He was able to send them in turn a lengthy sketch of the life of their grandmother in common, who had crossed the Plains to Utah, dying a few years later. In Iowa and Missouri she had buried two of her married daughters, who had fallen prey to the prevalent sickness. They were sisters of the grandfather of the Illinois branch of the family. They have treasured this account, and have read it at family gatherings. As a result he has received, from time to time, inquiries from scattered members of the family, who have sent him genealogy and

portraits and biographical sketches. All of these benefits came from that one personal visit years ago.

Recently a young married woman told of visiting her relatives in Indiana. At first she knew little or nothing on her genealogy and had very meager knowledge of her relatives in that area. But she made their acquaintance one by one. Her pleasing personality charmed them, and they were eager to help in the search. With her instinct for finding things they located an old trunk in the attic which finally divulged its forgotten treasures. Old and discarded family photographs were found stored in the loft of a barn — her very own ancestors, who now have a place on her portrait pedigree. The story of her findings during this personal visit reads like a fairly tale.

Relatives may write to you, with a full desire to help you, and yet not prove to be of much assistance. Then you make a personal visit. Under your skilful questioning they may recall an old chest in which are stored old deeds, documents, letters and even a painted portrait of the pioneer mother of the group. They may show you the framed photographs of ancestors on the walls of their home; and allow you to make reproductions of them with your camera on the spot. Yet none of these so desirable records was made available to you by correspondence. There is no true substitute for a personal visit to a kinsman.

Things to Avoid. Yet some personal visits may have disastrous results. Never impose upon your relatives. Even though a kinsman, you have no right to take up a homestead in their house and settle there. You can weary them with a prolonged stay, just as described by one of the poets,

> "by oft and tedious taking leave,
> Like some poor nigh-related guest
> That cannot rudely be dismissed,
> Yet hath outstayed his welcome while,
> And tells the jest without the smile."

Better, far better, in such a case, never to have called upon them. If you wish to obtain and preserve their friendship and willing cooperation in a fascinating endeavor in

common, you must be a gentleman or lady, and not take advantage of their hospitality to excess, nor presume too much on your relationship.

A Friendly and Tactful Approach. You should be genuinely interested in them and their family. Be considerate and sympathetic with their ambitions and ideals and achievements. Recognize that they may be sensitive on matters of politics or race or religion. Have toleration for their pride and their prejudices. For, despite any divergences of opinion on lesser matters you are of common origin, descended from the self-same forefathers, and you actually have many, many things in common. Concentrate your conversation on the things you enjoy together, in the true spirit of sharing. Appeal to the interests you know are near their hearts, and your visit can be enjoyable and profitable to them and to you.

Devices for Recording. Many things during the interview may be said that are worthy to be preserved. A more aged member recounting portions of the family history may say things in a graphic and appealing way that may never again be duplicated. What a treasure ever after in the family would be a tape recording of his vivid account in his own voice! And this could be easily duplicated for distant branches of the family to hear and enjoy. Photographs, colored or black and white, can preserve the likeness of these relatives long after the fickle memory may have failed you or the exact words of those questioned may be recorded in shorthand or on a typewriter should one be available. Failing this, be trained to take accurate notes, preserving the most essential parts of the account, even though some of the words may be lost. Then soon after, at the very first opportunity, use these notes to write out a complete record of what was said and done, before the vivid details fade and are gone.

In these days of almost universal photography, it is well to use your camera to make copies of pictures, documents, Bible records, family records. Learn to hear or read intently and accurately, write and remember. Be alert to

detect clues you may use for further research. From then on share with them freely your treasures of genealogical findings. It is always more blessed to give.

United Effort in Further Research. The genius of genealogical research is to utilize fully the help available from your many relatives. Visit them wherever possible; make friends of them; share information with them; then henceforth collaborate with them to trace your ancestral lines which you hold jointly with them further into the past.

I do not know of a single case of where one family genealogist has made all the genealogical discoveries on the family lineage. A proven pedigree and an appealing family history are truly the work of many hands. Each must avail himself of the efforts of other kinsmen. Only by all sharing their information can the best results be obtained. All should make the outcome of their research available to all others interested in that problem. Then one new development leads to another.

If you find a new ancestor, make it publicly known. Thousands of others may directly benefit. If each one of them does the same, see what marvelous success may be achieved. A genealogical endeavor which may be financially or geographically impossible for one researcher, may be readily accomplished by the united effort of a whole group of relatives.

Chapter 2 •

VERIFYING YOUR CONNECTIONS

A certain woman in Texas had a laudible desire to trace her forefathers.

Her motives were of the highest. She sincerely yearned to know the names of the men and women who had made her life possible. She sought interesting stories of their lives and adventures that would tell her and her posterity of their noble character and achievements. She hoped to find lineal connections with notable and well-known men of history. She wished to join societies whose membership took just pride in their lineage. She even dared to aspire to finding the homeland of the family in England, and perhaps following the family line on back to ancient times, to the good and great of old, even perchance to royalty itself. Finally her intention was to publish to the world, in most attractive form, sparing no expense, an appealing story of her ancestry that would warm the hearts of all that read it.

To begin with there was the oft-repeated family tradition that her second great-grandfather had fought in the Revolutionary War, at the side of George Washington. She promptly found the record of a soldier of that name from Maryland whose description seemed to fit exactly that of her soldier. She secured his full record of service, well documented.

Her family tradition strongly asserted that her branch was closely connected with an illustrious general of American history. The record of the newly found soldier proved him to be of the very same family as the general! It was uncanny how things were working out.

As the amazing discoveries rapidly unfolded, one after another, she was overjoyed with her good fortune. One line traced northward from Maryland to Massachusetts and right back to a Mayflower pilgrim of 1620. In a library she

found a printed genealogy of this her notable family of Maryland which provided the long sought English connection for it. This linked up, in just a few generations, with families of proud nobility and even coveted lines of royalty! Her success was complete and gratifying to her soul.

Now she could publish in beautiful print and elaborate binding, with many illustrations, her impressive genealogical contribution.

Before doing so, she made formal application for membership in The Daughters of the American Revolution society, and in The Society of Mayflower Descendants. Both applications were promptly rejected. The Revolutionary ancestor she had claimed, although of identical name, was an entirely different person from her traditional soldier, had a different wife, different children, died in Maryland and never did move westward as her second great-grandfather had done. Her supposed connection with the Mayflower passenger was through a man who had died without children. As a bitter climax she read in a genealogical magazine an exposure of the false claim she had accepted to the English origin of the family she had been following.

All her well-meant efforts had ended in utter frustration. She had not found the name of even one new actual ancestor. The thrilling life stories and all the pictures she had so enthusiastically garnered were not of her family. She had no right to join the hereditary societies; no ancient pedigree reaching back into antiquity; no nobles and no royalty. She had nothing to publish and no proud heritage to pass on to posterity. Her failure was complete and crushing.

Contributing Causes to Error. What did she do that was wrong? Almost everything. She had definite goals beforehand, but she wanted the outcomes to be in accord with her desires. She accepted a war record of a soldier without fully identifying him as her ancestor, other than by name. She adopted an unverified connection with a Mayflower line which could not be proved. She trustingly regarded the undocumented claim of a printed genealogy as a

fact. She concentrated on tracing ancient lineages when she should have first devoted all her energies to proving the parentage of her second great-grandfather. She gathered abundant pictures and life stories out of season — before proving her lineal right to them. She planned an imposing publication when her only objective at that stage should have been to establish an error-proof pedigree.

Nothing but absolute accuracy could satisfy any one of the six praiseworthy purposes of her search. Why then should she accept *anything* until it was *proved?* Was it that she did not understand the four points of identification — names, dates, places and relationships? Or was she untrained in what constitutes valid and conclusive proof and the most reliable kind of record evidence? Was she aware that family traditions frequently distort the truth or contain misleading errors, particularly as to relationship to the great? Did she realize that memories alone, apart from written records, are fickle, and that hearsay may be full of faults? Not always do people of honest intentions hear correctly what is told them. Nor do designing men of dishonest motives hesitate to foist forged connections upon the unsuspecting public.

Distorted Family Traditions. You, too, undoubtedly have your favorite family tradition. Being a tradition, it probably varies in the story from one branch of the family to another, and from generation to generation. That is inherent in the very nature of traditions. Repeated orally many times, preserved principally in memory, heard imperfectly and added to according to desire, traditions can and usually do distort the facts.

Great-grandfather, in an unguarded moment, perhaps said he may have been related to General Washington. Grandfather repeated that his father was a third cousin to the famous general. Father assured his folks that his grandfather was a first cousin to him. Your story likely is that you are a direct descendant of General George Washington himself—who had no children!

One family among us has been proud to be descended from a Revolutionary sire — Captain Hazard Wilcox —

who fought and died in the cause of American freedom. Yet a sworn statement by a son of Hazard Wilcox, the honored "patriot," states plainly that his father was a loyalist who fought on the king's side in the struggle for independence, and died in battle against his countrymen in the service of England.

Some traditions are even now in process of formation. Recently one of the posterity of Alexander Neibaur, an honored Utah pioneer, stated in class that President Brigham Young had asserted that Alexander Neibaur was not of Jewish blood at all, despite the claim to the contrary. However, Alexander Neibaur himself, in one of his autobiographies, disproves all this in part of one sentence: "Born of Jewish parents and educated in the Law of Moses to become a Rabbi, at 14 years of age I chose the profession of dentist, went to the University of Berlin, at 17 years of age, began to travel on the Continent of Europe as a Dentist."[1]

Fickle Memories. A daughter of another Utah pioneer stated that her father was a German Jew in origin. The pedigree of that same pioneer has since been traced quite completely on the various lines to about the year 1700. His progenitors are from various nations, being of German, Swiss, Dutch, French, English and Indian origin; but there is no sign as yet of any Jewish strain. Someone along the line must have mis-heard or forgotten.

Cases are on record in which it is claimed that the ancestor was the first white child born in a certain settlement. Town records show several others, boys and girls, were born prior to his birth there. He was *among the first* white children born in that town. Fickle memory eliminated the rest.

In still other families it is repeated with conviction that grandfather fought with distinction in several major battles of the Civil War. His notarized application for a pension, as obtained from the National Archives, with particulars of his military service, gives no indication that he

1. *A Guide for Genealogical Research,* p. 39.

participated in any actual engagement. Either he forgot or the memory of his offspring has played tricks on them.

Faultiness of Hearsay. What a marvelous faculty is a good memory! It is indispensable to a genealogist. But things told from memory can only be approximations of what was originally stated. What is heard and retained in the memory is not always an actual recording of what was said. It may be a mixture of what was heard and of what was thought at the time by the listener — a sort of fusion of the simultaneous thoughts of both the speaker and the hearer. The omission in the resulting product of just one little word like "if" or "not," or the failure to hear it, may convey an exactly opposite meaning to that intended.

Even trained stenographers have at times quoted speakers as saying the very contrary to what they did say. Then how accurately can one hope to arrive at the full truth from just one perhaps imperfect hearing and after a partial failure to remember all the details has entered in? To be a good witness you must not only hear the facts with your own ears but you must hear them correctly. Not only must you see things with your own eyes, but see or read them correctly and completely. Not only must you hear correctly the story of eye- and ear-witnesses, but you must seek to gauge the accuracy of their sight and hearing, and above all the adequacy of their memory.

Your own experience will teach you how some errors occur in statements of genealogy made by persons who should know the truth. A man gives the wrong name for his father-in-law. Another says his grandfather's name was Peter when actually it was John. A woman names six children of her parents. Records prove there were ten; four having died in infancy.

What Is Valid Proof? A good genealogist needs the gift of discernment — the power to distinguish unerringly between the true and the untrue account. This requires more than an instinct for accuracy, the feeling that a thing is correctly stated. He needs a formula to follow as a safe guide. What is a sure test of truthfulness?

Long experience has convinced reliable genealogists that a record that was *written down at the time an event happened by one who saw and heard and knew* of it *by his own personal experience* is most likely to be dependable. It is still better if the testimony of several others who had like knowledge can be added in corroboration.

Errors occur, of course, even in contemporary records, such as when the parish minister baptized a child and gave it the name of *Thomas* Garrett, but wrote down the child's name in the register as *John Garrett*. (The child already had a brother John.) This contemporary record officially recorded by one who was present and officiated was wrong, and had to be corrected later by the testimony of other witnesses who had knowledge of the occurrence.

But, human error excepted, a reliable record should be

a. written at the time
b. by one who knew
c. corroborated by other witnesses, and
d. in harmony with all other facts.

Checking Connecting Links. In your genealogical efforts you will of necessity be called upon to establish eventually thousands of family relationships. Over and over again you will be called upon to use the above-mentioned rule for testing reliable evidence.

A good place to begin is with your own pedigree. Prepare the first page of it beginning with your own name on line 1. As you fill in each name and identifying information called for, write down for that person the exact sources of information in your possession. Give every direct proof you have for your date and place of birth and marriage, and that you are a child of your parents. Cite specific evidence for this and avoid such generalizations as "certificates," "family research," "family records," "Bible Record," or "church records." Say "birth certificate of .....," "family record of....." or precisely what church record and on what page.

In reality few persons, relatively, are prepared to give such definite sources for every connection on that first

page of the pedigree. Even advanced students in genealogy are prone to hand in pedigree charts that are woefully lacking in source information. Sometimes a careful checking of the sources demonstrates that wrong names have been entered on the chart, and these have to be deleted and the chart corrected. Verification is your first duty. When you have verified every connection on the first chart you are under a like obligation to follow back from one chart to another, naming the exact proof for each name or date or place or relationship shown. This applies, no matter how many ancestral charts you may have.

If all who speak glibly of having so many lines traced back to Adam, had verified every link in their supposed pedigrees according to this recommended pattern, they would probably have fewer charts and be less prone to boast of their lengthy lineage.

Should you undertake research on another's pedigree, your first step is to follow this same painstaking procedure, verifying each family link that is given. By this means you will then have a firm foundation on which to base your future research.

One enthusiastic student spent two days at our Genealogical Library, copying pedigree charts of progenitors given for one of his forefathers. He was happy to find all this new information and copied eagerly; but was not happy when he was convinced that all these new connections had been compiled in error and did not belong to him at all. Two days of wasted effort, all to no purpose!

Had he been wise, he would have taken time to verify or disprove these purported connecting links for his ancestor before he did all that laborious copying.

Finding All Members of a Family. To compile a genuine genealogy of any of your families, you need to prove, not only the record of the parents and the one child from whom you descend, but also the connection of *all the children* in the family. This requires more meticulous care and vastly more industrious effort. But the reward comes to you in the more complete and satisfying record that results. The probability is greatly increased that this enlarged

family record will be accurate. Thoroughness is your safe insurance against wrong connections.

This type of family research also reveals more interesting kinships and family stories than you would obtain by concentrating solely on the names in the direct ancestral line.

Testing the Truth of Conclusions. Any compiled genealogy will be studied and utilized by other genealogists. The better trained they are, the more expert they will be in checking over the conclusions you have reached and the evidence you have set down to establish them. Your work should be proof against any just criticism. Why not be your own most severe critic? Go over your findings with an open, impartial and judicious mind, asking if there is sufficient valid proof for each and every relationship. The more exacting you are in this critical analysis, the less likelihood that you will later be embarrassed by some more careful researcher exposing an error you overlooked.

You can gain many valuable pointers for such an exercise of inspection, by reading accounts of how renowned genealogists have proved long-sought ancestral links, and of how logically they present their case to the public.

Proof Required by Hereditary Societies. Those organizations which require proof of descent from a progenitor have done much to raise the standards of genealogical research. The Sons of the American Revolution, The Daughters of the American Revolution, The Society of Mayflower Descendants, and a number of others, now demand proof of descent of their members. It is true that the quality of proof exacted in the earlier years was not what would be considered sufficient by them today; for they have learned that many wrong lineages were placed on record and even published because insufficient valid proof was presented with the application for membership.

In 1958 the National Society, Daughters of the American Revolution, published a booklet entitled, *Is That Lineage Right?* This was a training manual for the examiner of

lineage papers, with helpful hints for the beginner in genealogical research. The hope was expressed "that it will be helpful to all interested in the lives of their forefathers, and that it will aid in developing more and better genealogical research."

To become a member of this Society one must descend from "a man or woman who, with unfailing loyalty to the cause of American Independence, served as a sailor, or as a soldier, or civil officer in one of the several Colonies or States, or in the United Colonies or States, or was a recognized patriot, or rendered material aid thereto."

The verifier of a lineage submitted by an applicant is to be guided by certain rules. When there is no indication of error, the names, dates and places in the generations of the parents and grandparents and the fact of such relationship, are accepted from personal knowledge of the applicant, as supported by her affidavit to the application. It is wise for her to include evidence covering all data in these generations and especially for the connection between the generations.

Connections between generations earlier than the grandparents must be proved by Bible records, vital records, a church record of baptism, wills, deeds, orphans' court records, guardianship papers, census records after 1850, etc., or reliable published genealogies or other data, showing that the particular child from whom the applicant claims descent was born on a given date, the child of the parents named for it.

Dates must be reasonable; and localities given must be reasonable for the time and area involved. References to published data must be indicated by volume and page, and the author and full title of the volume. References to unpublished sources must be supported by acceptable copies (photo or certified), which should accompany the application. These are often birth and death certificates, Bible records, etc., used to support the statements for recent generations.

Before the verifier can be sure of the accuracy of the conclusions in the application, it must be determined that

the pedigree as a whole is reasonable under the conditions, background, and area in which each generation lived.

The basic rule is: "Every fact must be proved by the best evidence possible under the circumstances of the particular case. The highest type, the most valuable evidence, is always to be sought for and used. The preferred sequence is

(a) Primary evidence,
(b) Collateral evidence,
(c) Secondary evidence,
(d) Circumstantial evidence, and
(e) Reported evidence.

"Hearsay, that which has been told, or family tradition, is not evidence and cannot be accepted."

The above rules may be accepted as typical of those required in proof of eligibility to join a number of other hereditary societies.

Chapter 3 •

FROM CLUES TO CERTAINTY

On every pedigree there are problems awaiting solution. Not all genealogical problems are of the same stature. There are the big problems and the little ones. Some may be quickly solved by consulting a printed family history on the surname in question in a library. Others may be mastered by a search among original, unpublished volumes in a courthouse, church or record repository of the locality where the family resided.

The really big problem, the one that is temporarily impossible to solve, is one in which there is no printed genealogy to help and no clue in evidence pointing to a place of birth or residence. Without such a clue to guide or direct one to a logical place to make a search the difficult pedigree puzzle may remain unconquered for years. Therefore, the discovery of a usable clue becomes the paramount objective.

It is not difficult to cite typical examples of the impossible status of problems without clues. John Mack of Salisbury, Massachusetts, and Lyme, Connecticut, is reputed to have been born in Scotland, but there is no indication of the town, parish or larger area of his birth. One theory has been advanced "that the name was originally like McDougal or McTanish, which on his coming to America was abbreviated to 'Mack.' " To offset this suggestion it is possible to find families with the surname of Mack in various parts of Scotland. So such a clue, giving so vague and very general place indication, is of no real service in genealogical research. Scotland is far too large a place to begin a search there for a John Mack, without more definite place identification. His ancestry remains unsolved.

Moses Rowley, 4th, was born 5 September 1713, at East Haddam, Middlesex County, Connecticut. He had

a wife Mary, but her surname is unknown. They had four children baptized in the East Haddam church; and others born in Kent, Litchfield County, Connecticut. No will for Moses had been found. Deeds and church records give his wife's first name only. So although the place location is good, and records undoubtedly exist of her ancestors in Connecticut and Massachusetts, without an indication of her surname or a hint as to who her relatives might have been, her lineage is still a mystery.

John Shaver or Shafer was a loyalist in the American Revolution, and settled in what is now Williamsburg, Ontario, Canada. He was granted land there. Without a record indicating where he came from in the United States the problem of his ancestral origin appears impossible.

Another instance where clues are at a premium is the case of tracing the parentage and ancestry of Jesse B. Groscost of Washington Township, Van Wert County, Ohio. Since he was living there in 1850, the 1850 federal census of Van Wert County was searched on the film (F Ohio 4, Part 18). He was located in District 147, page 147, as Jesse Groscost, age 51, born Pa. His wife Mary was aged 37. The big problem now is to find *where* in Pennsylvania he was born.

Ability to Recognize a Clue. Some researchers are more imaginative and more discerning than others, and may detect clues where others pass them blithely by. Clues can only hint at a possible solution, and not all researchers can take the hint. These faint suggestions of what might possibly be done may lead to nothing of value; they may lead to the records which will give the very facts you seek. The genealogical searcher must train himself to be forever alert to the possibilities of the faintest clue, exploring each avenue that appears, and even the lanes and footpaths.

Can you detect any clue to follow in the brief statement about John Shaver above? Where and in what records would you begin the search? What can be done to locate the home and birthplace of Jesse Groscost in the big state of Pennsylvania? Where is the logical place to search for the maiden name of Mrs. Rowley? Is there actually a clue

which could be followed to locate the birthplace in Scotland of John Mack?

The Detective Instinct. Whenever there is a clue there is at least a hope. The researcher in a very real sense is like a detective. He should be trained to see and hear every little detail and logically to seek a valid explanation for each happening or statement or fact. This procedure consistently and repeatedly practiced can become second nature to him. He calls for all the known facts, written records and oral traditions, and whatever tiny detail has been preserved about the family to be traced. He must closely question family members. They may fail to mention the very item which offers a needed clue, as something of no consequence. He must make sure they withhold no pertinent information. His training will teach him which clues may hold out the prospect of success.

Even then, he may miss the vital point at the first inspection, and be compelled to take a second or third look. There are occasions when "the stone that was rejected by the builders" has become the chief cornerstone in the evidence required to build a solid and enduring pedigree.

Clues May Lead to Further Facts. Did you notice that John Shaver was a "loyalist" and as such was given a grant of land in Ontario? Loyalists were those who fought on the king's side in the Revolutionary War. They were true to their principles as the "patriots" were true to theirs. In Canada they were called "United Empire Loyalists." The British government gave them generous grants of land in the wooded wilderness along the St. Lawrence River and elsewhere. Many from the Schoharie and Mohawk Valleys of New York State settled in the vicinity of Williamsburg Township.

Each soldier entitled to a grant of land for military service was expected to make formal application for his share before the Land Board. If he desired reimbursement for losses he had sustained in being driven from his American home he itemized the losses, usually stating where his former property was located. Fortunately many of these applications have been printed.

In the *Second Report of the Bureau of Archives for Ontario*, 1904, was printed a collection of "Claims of United Empire Loyalists." Among them is this application, in condensed form, of John Shaver:

> "1073. Claim of JOHN SHAVER, late of Tryon Co. January 28, 1788, Montreal.
>
> Claimt. says: He gave his Claim to Capt. Duncan in '83. Is a nat. of Amer., lived at Turloch, Tryon Co., when Rebellion broke out, joined in '77, served all the War. Now lives in New Johnstown. Had 200 acres at Turloch about ..... miles from the Mohawk, bought 3 years before the War of Henry Hanes for 200 pounds York Cur^{cy}. He had 6 yrs. to pay. The time was not out when he came away. He had cleared 7 acres, built a house. Vals. his clear land at 6 pounds per acre, including his House, 2 horses, 2 Cows, 1 Heifer, 1 Sheep, Cloathes, furniture, utensils. Left all behind, were sold at Vendue by the Rebels."
>
> (A marginal notation reads: "A good man.")

From this his own statement under oath you will of course have noted that he was born in America, and lived at *Turloch, Tryon Co.* He had bought 200 acres at Turloch a few miles from the Mohawk. This gives the all-important place location. A Jacob Markley witnessed the truth of the above claim. (From a printed source we learn they were brothers-in-law.)

Sad to say, there is no Turloch or Tryon County in the State of New York. Here a little detailed knowledge of history and of the local geography comes to the rescue. The place was first named Durloch or New Durlach, but now appears on the map as Sharon, in Schoharie County. Tryon County, named after a New York governor who later became unpopular because he was an ardent loyalist, was soon changed to Montgomery County. A few miles from Sharon is the village of Cobleskill, also in Schoharie County.

Searching All the Sources. The records of Schoharie County and the church records of that locality may now be searched, and should yield helpful facts.

Among Schoharie County wills is that of Adam Shafer of Cobleskill, dated Dec. 20, 1817; probated Jan. 30, 1819;

who mentions his son Johannes (John) and other children, including his daughter Maria, wife of Jacob Merkle (p. 47).

A thorough search of the Lutheran and Reformed Church records of Schoharie gives the marriage of John's parents, Adam Schaffer and Maria Magdalena Huls or Hils, and their ancestors for several generations.

Cases of Conflicting Evidence. As new facts are gathered it is common for some of the new-found statements to be contrary to others. In every case of conflict new and additional evidence must be obtained, and the proof back of each claim must be carefully weighed.

According to the 1850 census Jesse Groscost was born in Pennsylvania. If so, the probability is that his father or grandfather would be head of a family there in the 1790 census of Pennsylvania. But the printed census record for 1790 lists no person named Groscost at all. Yet a more recent statement by a great-grandson, Charles Arthur Groscost, declares that Jesse B. Groscost was born in the year 1799, in Adams Co., Penn., and had a wife Mary.

Not finding any Groscosts in the 1790 census, we look for names of similar sound. Here are some entries:

p. 289 GROSSCROSS, Daniel 2-0-3 Berwick Tp., etc., York Co.
GROSSCROSS, John 1-2-2 Berwick Tp., etc., York Co.
GROSSCROSS, John 1-0-3 Berwick Tp., etc., York Co.
p. 210 GROSCOP, Jno.
p. 42 GROSECUP, Paul
p. 205 GROSKOPF, Margaret

Strange variations appear for surnames in census records. But we cannot be sure of any of these at this stage. So we look further, consulting the printed Index to Tax Lists in the *Pennsylvania Archives,* 3rd Series, Vol. 28 (p. 85), watching as usual for reasonable spelling variations. The nearest to GROSCOST are these:

GROSCAST, Daniel .....vol. xxi, pp. 110, 715
GROSCAST, John .....vol. xxi, pp. 110, 715
GROSEAST, Daniel .....vol. xxi, pp. 446, 563
GROSEAST, Jacob .....vol. xxi, pp. 446, 563
GROSEAST, John .....vol. xxi, p. 563

The picture now begins to take on meaning. GROSCAST, GROSEAST, and GROSCROSS appear to be variations in the reading of handwriting of the same surname. So each separate entry in the Index is looked up and copied verbatim. Then all are studied and analyzed. What would be your explanation of this record?

TAX LISTS, PENNSYLVANIA ARCHIVES, 3rd Series, Vol. 21 (Pa. 85):

Residence: *Berwick Township, York County, Pa.*

			Acres	*Horses*	*Cattle*	*Tax*
p. 110	1779	Grosscast, Daniel	180	3	3	75.0.0
		Grosscast, John	200	3	5	70.0.0
p. 446	1781	Groseast, John				2.5.0
		Groseast, Jacob				2.5.0
p. 563	1782	Groseast, Daniel	180	4	3	9.0.0
		Groseast, Daniel				3.0.0
		Groseast, John	240	3	5	9.16.6
p. 715	1783	Grosscast, Daniel	180	3 inhabitants		1 servant
		Grosscast, Daniel		1 inhabitant		
		Grosscast, John	204	7 inhabitants		
		Grosscast, John		1 inhabitant		

Three of these last named appear as GROSSCROSS in the 1790 census.

Placing a Proper Value On Evidence. Just what do these entries tell us? First, that there was only one family of Groscost or Groscast (the pronunciation being almost identical, the "e" in Groseast being a misreading of Groscast) living in Pennsylvania, and it resided in Berwick Township, York County. The two older heads of families were Daniel and John, undoubtedly relatives, perhaps brothers or father and son. In 1783 Daniel had three in family; John had seven. The other Daniel and the other John, probably both single in 1783, were of the younger generation. Only the two older men owned land, Daniel 180 acres and John 200 or over.

The place to begin the search is evidently in York County, among wills, deeds and other available court, orphans court and guardianship records, and additional tax lists. We can begin the search in the microfilmed records of

York County with assurance. The Groscosts or Groscasts are bound to be there. We have found the place location of the family.

One conflict may be disturbing. Jesse B. Groscost, the ancestor in question, was said to have been born in *Adams* County. Actually Adams County was formed from York County in the year 1800. Berwick Township is now in Adams County, and nearby are many gravestones of Groscosts. They are not far from Gettysburg, the county seat.

Judging the Case Impartially. A visit there established contact with undoubted relatives. From Arthur Weaner, R. D. 4, Gettysburg, Pa., this family record was obtained:

JOHN GROSCOST, b. abt. 1733, Pa.
CHRISTINA, b. abt. 1737, Pa.

Children:

John Groscost — b. abt. 1759, Pa.
Jacob Groscost — b. abt. 1761, Pa.
Daniel Groscost — b. abt. 1763, Pa.
Elizabeth Groscost—b. abt. 1765, Pa.
Susana Groscost — b. May 1767, Pa.
md. 22 Feb. 1786 Joseph Little
Christena Groscost—b. abt. 1769, Pa.
md. John Knight
Mary Groscost — b. abt. 1771, Pa.
md. John Bollis or Bolin

Would you not conclude that this was the older John Groscast of the tax lists? But his son Daniel, unless older than approximated in this record, could not be the Daniel owning 180 acres in 1779. So more facts are to be obtained before any decisions are finally rendered.

Next we turn to *Pennsylvania German Pioneers,* to the Index in Vol. 3 (Pa. Pub. B. Vol. 44), p. 396. This lists a PHILIP GROSCOST in Vol. I, pp. 31, 32, 34. On these pages there is record of an immigrant Philip Groscost (he signs by mark) in List 11A who came with the "Palatines imported in the Thistle of Glasgow, from Rotterdam, but last from Dover p. Clearance June 19th (Qualified [by taking the oath of allegiance] Aug. 29, 1730)."

Is it logical to conclude that this Philip Groscost was the ancestor of the family in Berwick Township, and likely the father of the first Daniel and John? What is your considered and unbiased opinion on this point?

When a Case is Proved. It is still unwise to treat any tentative explanation as the final solution. Why? Because all the evidence obtainable is not yet in. Only a foolish judge would attempt to render a just decision before he had heard all the testimony. The search properly continues.

The records of York County and of Adams County (after 1800) have been largely microfilmed and are in the Genealogical Library at Salt Lake City. A search of these is disappointing in some particulars, but rewarding in others.

The Tax List for 1800 for Berwick Township, Adams County (F Pa. A lf, Part 1), shows only one of this name living there:

> Groskast, John—150 acres, 2 horses, 2 cattle, a saw mill, a trulling mill, an oil mill, 1 house, 1 barn.

He is not listed in 1801, 1802, 1803, 1804 or 1805. Then a Daniel appears on the lists for 1806 and 1808, with 1 horse, 1 cow, and some other property. A check of the annual tax lists for the years 1809-1820 reveals no other mention of a Groscost. Daniel in 1806 had his name spelled *Groscost* and in 1808 *Groscat*.

What is the proper explanation of these new facts? If Jesse B. Groscost was born in Adams County (then York) in 1799, and there was only a John Groscast taxed there in 1800, can we assume that John is the father of Jesse? Did John die or move away after 1800? Was the Daniel of 1806 and 1808 a son of John and a brother of Jesse who moved to Ohio? Wills might help.

There is no will of a Groscost or of any other form of the spelling of that surname found in the Index to Wills of Adams County. The Index to Wills of York County show only that of Daniel Groscost, Oct. 9, 1905, of Paradise Township, mentioning Jacob Wesley Groscost and Harry Elmer Groscost (Book SS, p. 429). This of course

is too late for our immediate purpose, although undoubtedly pertaining to a descendant of the family. It should be looked up and copied.

The Index to the Orphans Court Docket of York County (F Pa. Y le, Part 1), for the years 1749-1840, indicates in Book F, page 338, that sometime during the period 1786-1793, a guardian was appointed for Magdalena and John Groscost. This should have a direct bearing on our problem.

The actual record when consulted reads as follows:

> At an Orphans Court held at York For the County of York the twenty-seventh Day of March in the Year of our Lord one thousand Seven hundred and Ninety two, Before Henry Slagle, William Scott and Jacob Rudisill, Esquires, Judges &c.
>
> Came into Court Jacob Groscost And prayed that Guardians may be appointed for Magdalena Groscost aged Six years and upwards, and John Groscost aged about five years, his Children To take care of their Estate coming to them from Theobolt Shallas's Estate Decd. Whereupon the Court appoint John Groscost of Berwick Township to be and he Is hereby appointed Guardian of the Estates of Said Minors. (Book F, p. 338.) (#5289, F Pa Y le, Pt. 4.)

This legal document gives a definite and an inferred relationship. Jacob Groscost calls Magdalena and John his children. Their ages are given. They having property coming to them out of the estate of Theobald Shallas, we may imply some relationship to him; but precisely what is not stated. John Groscost of Berwick Township is evidently closely related to them, since he was appointed their guardian.

The Index to York County Deeds enumerates several on record between the years 1894 and 1911, all recent; and also two of especial interest because dated in the period in question. In the first "Daniel Groscast of Mountplesand in the County of Westmoreland and State of Pennsylvania intermarried with Susannah one of the Grand Children of Theobalt Shollas deceased" acknowledges receipt from the latter's executor of nineteen pounds "in full of the Shear or part of said Susannah by virtue of a Specifick Legacie

devised to her in and by the Last Will and Testament of said Theobald Shollas aforesaid." We are informed the will of Theobald was dated "the fifth Day of September 1788." This release was dated 9 March 1794; and proved 27 March 1794. (Deed Book 2K, p. 533.)

From the second deed we are told that Dominicus Riddle, late of Germany Township, York County, Pa., had died, leaving a widow and certain children who are named "and the Children of Ann Grosecast deceased (who was also one of the Daughters of the said Dominicus Riddle, and who had intermarried with a Certain John Grosecast, to Survive him." Ann had a brother John Riddle, only son and heir of Dominicus, and sisters Christina (md. Matthias Epple), Susanna Riddle and Catharina Riddle. The widow of Dominicus, Anna Margaret, had since married Peter Stimmel. On 13 March 1775 John Riddle, the son, was permitted to sell the property of his father Dominicus, and distribute the proceeds of 150 pounds among his father's heirs, including "the Representatives of the said Ann Grosecast deceased." (Deed Book I, pp. 372-374.)

John Grosscast of Berwick Township, York Co., having entered special security for the said John Riddle unto the before mentioned Orphans Court for the payment of Sums of money mentioned in the said decree of the said Court, unto the Widow and other children and Representatives of the said Dominicus Riddle deceased by the said John Riddle was released from that obligation and quitclaimed Ann Grosecast's children's share unto Peter Engle, 13 March 1775. He signs by mark. Proved by one of the witnesses 17 Jan. 1794. (Book I, p. 374.)

The Satisfaction of Certainty. It is gratifying from these legal documents to be certain of some family relationships. Dominicus Riddle married Anna Margaret . . ., who remarried after his death Peter Stimmel. Dominicus had an only son and heir, John Riddle, and daughters as enumerated above. His daughter, Ann Riddle, married John Groscost, who died before her. She was deceased by the 13th of March 1775. In 1774 a younger John Grosecast

quitclaims the property due Ann (Riddle) Grosecast's children, so he must then have been of age. What was his relationship to Ann and the first John?

Fair Explanations of Inferred Relationships. Now comes the delicate duty of determining other relationships not directly stated. Was the younger John Groscost a son of John Groscost, deceased, and his wife Ann Riddle? Was this younger John identical with the John Groscost who was living in Berwick, Adams County, Pa., in 1800? Was he the father of Jesse B. Groscost, later of Ohio? To be truthful we must state honestly what is proved and what is implied.

Chapter 4 •

THE HISTORICAL BACKGROUND

The drama of human life is a continuous performance. It was in full motion when each of your ancestors made entrance by birth and set foot upon the stage of life. It carried on with undiminished activity when he made exit by death. He played his part according to his personality, character, talents and courage. Yet history set the stage and provided the scenery, and his enactment was influenced at every step by the people, places and events of his time — the historical setting for his life.

So prone are we to identify our forefathers with their historical background that we habitually describe them as Pilgrims, Puritans, Huguenots, Quakers, Pennsylvania Dutch, Cavaliers and planters, patriots or loyalists, backwoodsmen and frontiersmen, forty-niners and western pioneers. It is virtually impossible to think of an ancestor and understand his actions except as a part and product of the history of his day and age.

Family Happenings and Historical Movements. One father of a future posterity was born of German parentage, and grew up in the Mohawk Valley in New York. He built his cabin in the wilderness, worshipped at a little frontier Lutheran church, married a wife of French Protestant origin, made friends with some Indians and fought others, and reared a stalwart family of sons and daughters. With sudden fury the war for independence descended upon them, and in the violent taking of sides in the ensuing struggle, some of the sons took one side and fought against their brothers marching with the opposing forces. The once devoted family was torn asunder, and the survivors settled far apart, and their descendants feel a rankling of that former animosity even to this day.

Another family of Scotch-Irish extraction moved southward from Pennsylvania to North Carolina, then over the mountains to Tennesee. A part of the offspring moved northwestward into Illinois; the other segment took the trail to Arkansas and Texas. Then came the Civil War, and cousins from the North fought bitterly against cousins from the South; and history charted the course of their lives.

The discovery of gold in California attracted seekers of adventure from Maine to Florida, and in the western settlements which mushroomed overnight were found New Englanders, Kentuckians and Texans, living next door to one another as neighbors and frequently intermarrying. Only history can shed a light on the strange and often bewildering family movements and family happenings. Truly they were creatures of their times.

Colonial Settlements. Unique in all the annals of history is the strange story of a whole vast new continent being suddenly thrown open to settlement. From the various countries of the Old World came streams of emigrants, eager to leave unhappy conditions behind them to brave the perils of and seek a better fortune in the New. Surely the heart of the student is stirred as he reads of the founding of precarious settlements on the seacoast. For decades it was touch and go as to whether they would survive; but they clung on tenaciously, increased in numbers gradually, and soon began to send their people to establish daughter colonies further inland.

Sons of poor immigrants became the proud possessors of extensive plantations. Amid frontier conditions and out beyond the rigid restraints of government rule, they developed a spirit of sturdy self-reliance and a love of independence. Soon was formed a new race of hardy men and women who had not learned subservience to any man or set of men. Those who had planted their home in the wilderness, amid the mountains or along river valleys, defying the rigors of climate and the scalping knife of the red man, were in no mood to be ordered about by foreigners from over the sea, and to be told what they could or could not do. They loved the freedom they had found.

Tendency to Move West. No genealogist can truly chronicle the annals of a family by preserving only one paragraph of statistics after another, with a collection of names and dates and places, but none of the spirit of the life and times and great historic happenings which helped to shape their lives and make them meaningful.

Typical of the spirit of the pioneer families were the Scotch-Irish frontiersmen.

> The Scotch-Irishman is not the child of a marriage in which one parent came from Scotland and the other from Ireland. It means only and truly the descendant of the Scotch man or woman who settled in or passed through the North of Ireland previous to residence in this country. . . . The people of Ulster, particularly the Protestant portion of the community, are a people of highly mixed blood. From time to time there have been several marked and important immigrations into that part of the country, not only of Scotch, but also English, French, Huguenots, and some Germans . . . so that in the North of Ireland you have a singularly mixed blood. . . . The Ulsterman is probably the most composite person to be found at the present hour, with the exception of our American people, and it is a fair question how much of the energy and restless forces of the unconquerable and progressive Ulsterman is due to this mixture of parentage.[1]
>
> For one hundred and nine years they had endured all the tests by which love of liberty, allegiance to conscience, and faith in God try men. And thus, coming to the soil of Pennsylvania were self-reliant men and women, equipped and ready to bear those mighty responsibilities which ever befall the progenitors of Christian freedom. . . .
>
> From 1717 to 1750 they poured into the highland fastnesses of Pennsylvania. The march of advancing civilization ever moves with the strong men in front. Thus it was the Scotch and Irish ever first assailed the farthest verge of dangerous frontiers. . . . Landing at Philadelphia, or New Castle, they at once plunged into the vast solitudes with the same abandon hunters traverse well-accustomed paths within the woods.[2]
>
> They came in groups of families, neighbors, perhaps, in the homes they had left in Ulster, and located themselves, generally, in the colonies of Pennsylvania, Virginia, and the Carolinas, where, as their fathers had done in Ireland, they organized their congregations, set up their neighborhood schools, and

1. John S. Macintosh, D.D., *The Scotch-Irish in America,* 1900, pp. 182-183.
2. Robert Cabeen Bair: "The Scotch-Irish Conquest," *op. cit.,* 1901, pp. 118-119.

by a sedulous attention to their own affairs, set an example in industry, economy, and morality, the influence of which is still visible in the intelligence, thrift, refinement and orderly deportment which distinguish the communities in which they settled.

The part played by this remarkable race in preparing the popular mind of their adopted country for independence, as well as in the bloody contest which terminated in that glorious result, it would be difficult, if not impossible, to overestimate. . . . They were plain, earnest, determined men, who wanted results— results which would secure for their children and their children's children, the priceless patrimony of freedom — and for that they rushed to the fiery front of battle, reckless as to who might lead them so he led them to victory or to death.

Would you know their names? In every walk of private usefulness and public honor; in every avenue of active enterprise and popular progress; in every department of literature, and in every branch of science; in every theater of honorable ambition; in the pulpit and at the bar; on the field and in the cabinet, on the bench and in the halls of legislation; in the chambers of our highest courts, and in the presidential chair, they and their sons have written them in imperishable characters upon the brightest pages of our country's history. Go read them there.

The children of the race are now scattered throughout all this broad continent, mingling like drops of water in the mighty ocean, with a vast and wondrous people gathered from many lands; but wherever they may be, they and their descendants will cherish with affectionate veneration the honor of their ancient sires, and keep the sacred fires of family love brightly burning on their domestic altars.[3]

These immigrants landed on our shores, and with hardly a halt began to push their way to where they could find unoccupied lands. This was their first subject of consideration, and here they stopped as soon as they found it. In the intensity of their new found joys of freedom and land — land they could hope to own, and thus fill the once utopian dream of their lives of being real land owners — it is hoped they forgot the repelling features, the dangers and gloom that otherwise would have settled upon them at the end of their long journeys, and the first realizations of their arrival in the wilderness.

These were the strong marks of all the early settlers, without regard to race. They would land, sometimes, one wagon to several families, and. in some instances, there was wagon room enough to sleep the women and children, and where this was the case, the arrangement was regarded as very comfort-

3. Procter Knott, *op. cit.*, 1889, pp. 88-89.

able indeed. When there was no wagon a brush tent was made, and here the entire family housed until the first rude cabin could be put up. The clapboard cabin once up and the elated family moved in, then, floorless and doorless as it was, there was real, solid family rejoicing. It was the first feeling of triumphant victory over their long days of doubt and sore trial. Indeed, it was much more — it was home. It was their world, conquered and won by their own strong arms and brave hearts, and in this struggle father, mother, and all the children had partaken. The father was the commanding captain, but he commanded as loyal a squad as was ever mustered upon this earth.[4]

Settling the Wilderness. Homes must be made. Men felled trees; women and children gathered and burned the trimmed off branches and the brush. This outdoor labor was hard, but it gave them health and a vigorous appetite for their black bread and salt pork, their constant diet for the earlier days.

The pioneer family had to start at the very beginning, with "a few grains of corn or wheat, the seeds of an apple or pear, or a potato" as the meager source for later supply of family food. Soon they found the woods supplied them with abundant meat, the crab apple, the plum and the grape, and a plentiful quantity of delicious nuts. There also they found the wild onion and certain vegetables containing acid. These they ate freely.

"Except for this they must have all suffered from scurvy. . . . But the limpid, sweet waters, the bracing mountain air and the variety they could find existing in the country, gave them rather vigorous health, and strong and hardy constitutions."[5]

Yet food and a home were not their chief concern. Family worship was not neglected. Their treasured Bible and the prayer book were religiously if laboriously read with honest and pious sincerity. As soon as a few families had set up neighboring homes they joined hands to build a combination log church and schoolhouse. It was a great event when a visiting preacher would pause to hold a service, marry young couples who were waiting for his coming,

4. *History of Adams County, Pennsylvania,* Part III, pp. 58-59.
5. *Ibid.,* p. 65.

and baptize the babies. The sermons were long and eloquent, and proclaimed most rigid morals. "To them the Bible was the literal word of God."

Farming tools and implements were of the most primitive and clumsy construction. At the first they possessed few animals — a horse or two, and several cattle, including the needed milk cow. Maybe a little shaggy pony was the pride of the family. "A yoke of oxen, sometimes a cow yoked with an ox, or a yoke of cows, a wooden plow lined at the base with a strip of iron, a home-made wagon — the melodious old truck — with its solid wheels cut from a large tree, made round, and a hole in the center for the axle-tree, and greased with soft soap, and when this began to wear out its call for more would ring out over the hills and far away like the dying yells of a fabled monster — all these were wealth to them."

Man-made Obstacles. Not only were they exposed to the cold of winter and the heat of the summer, and drenched at times with heavy rains, but there were numerous wild animals that must be met and fought and exterminated. Yet fiercer far than all the animals of prey were the man enemies on every hand.

In front and on each side of them were the warlike Indians. Proud possessors of their cherished hunting grounds from prehistoric times, they hated these white intruders on their ancient domain, and fought with every wily skill and every species of torture and cruelty and captivity to stem the ever advancing tide of humanity which was sweeping away their heritage. For generations the relentless struggle went on, with no quarter being given or asked on either side. In almost every family history for those early days are harrowing chapters of Indian raids and depredations, scalpings and burnings, of women and children carried into captivity, of merciless reprisals by the avenging white settlers, and the never-ending vigil that must always be maintained.

The natural barriers and the Indians would have been obstacles enough, but there were also frequent wars with the French to the north in Canada and the Spanish and

Mexicans to the south. Every war that was waged in Europe had its smaller counterpart in the colonies in America. White men on each side enlisted the aid of the Indians, and even led the savage bands in sudden raids of extermination on outlying settlements. Farmers had to leave the little log home unfinished, the clearing only partly made or the hard won field untilled, to march in a war expedition to Canada or to the western wilds. Following the French and Indian War came the battles of the Revolution, which involved in the strife every section of the land. The next generation in another war sent their sons into Canada or to follow General Andrew Jackson to New Orleans. Later came the war with Mexico and the Civil War. Man against man caused war and its aftermath to loom large in the history of every American family of the past.

Blazing New Trails. Despite the difficult physical barriers erected by nature — mountains and rivers and forests and arid plains — and the constant peril which beset them on every hand from relentless enemies, the pioneers found new paths through which to push ever westward. Intrepid explorers were the first to venture into the ominous unknown, other daring souls followed, and soon an unending stream of pioneers poured over the newly made paths to find homes in the unsettled areas.

A typical example of the experiences of a pioneer family is that of the Hardins of Kentucky. The Hardin pedigree goes back to a Mark Hardin, a Huguenot refugee from Rouen, France, who fled from his homeland because of religious persecution. The tradition is that he went to England, then Canada, and from there to Virginia. His son, Mark Hardin, had among others two sons, Major John Hardin and Martin Hardin.

Major John Hardin and his wife, Catharine Marr, were the parents of eleven children. He served as an officer in the French and Indian War. Later his family moved to George's Creek, in southwest Pennsylvania. A detailed map shows the location of his land, and that of his relatives, at George's Creek. His son, called Captain John Hardin, owned a mill there. Captain John had a son known as

Jack Hardin, who is the hero of a printed history of the Hardin family. Of Major John Hardin, ancestor of this group, it is said:

> He was a dominant figure in his generation. He went, along with his sons, to Kentucky, and was killed by the Indians in 1789 about one mile west of Hardinsburg, the town built by his son William, known as Indian Bill.

Indian Attacks. A terrible tragedy overtook the families of the sons, grandsons, nephews and other relatives of Major John Hardin in 1780. Fifteen families, composed entirely of kindred by blood and marriage, set out on the Ohio River in two flatboats for Kentucky. They had one large boat loaded with their horses, cattle and heavy movable property. The other was a small, light boat prepared especially for their families. The heavy boat with the horses and other animals required the presence of nearly all the manpower to navigate it and care for the stock. The family boat with the women and children was manned by two of the men and some boys. It was arranged for them to keep it directly behind the heavy boat for protection.

FLATBOATS ON THE RIVER

One day as they drifted on the river a large force of Indians suddenly fired upon the two boats. The two men on the family boat were both killed; and about half of the men on the larger boat were either killed or crippled. The two boats now separated. The family boat drifted to the northern shore of the river; and the larger boat with the remaining men on it drifted over to the southern or Kentucky shore, more than a mile away.

While these men were thus helpless to render aid to their loved ones, in agonizing inability to come to the rescue, they saw the Indians attack the family boat.

The boys on board that boat fought as heroes and kept the Indians at bay until the last boy was killed. The last to fall was Stephen Hardin, age ten, a great-grandson of Major John Hardin. "Mother," he cried out, "my last shot shall be in your defence." He was shot down and his body mangled. The surviving women and children were carried into captivity.

The Hardin men and their relatives swore to avenge their loved ones and recover the captives. The family history of the Hardins, printed in 1915, tells how this was done. They took what they felt was an ample revenge; and the Indians for long years learned of the swift and certain strength of their avenging weapons.

History Lights the Path of the Genealogist. No genealogist can do his work well who deliberately shuts his eyes on the stirring events of history, and ignores the historic happenings in which his family had part. To do this would be to close the door deliberately to his chief source of supply for the facts of the family history and the genealogical details. Rather he should become an earnest student of the historical background and of the series of events and places which shaped their lives.

Here are a few of the advantages which history can bring to the genealogist who aspires to be more than a mere statistician:

1. It gives him a true picture of the environment in which his ancestors played their part.

2. It enables him to form a higher appreciation of their characters and of the momentous decisions they had to make.
3. It presents vivid portrayals of their living conditions.
4. It delineates the caliber of their morality and spirituality.
5. It trains him to be loath to sit in judgment upon their deeds apart from the conditions and circumstances which called those deeds forth.
6. It provides often excellent clues for guiding further research.
7. It indicates clearly where to look for ancestral records.
8. It permits him to present the past to his readers as a living drama.

Be a Well-Informed Student of History. In view of this, if you would qualify yourself to be a genuine genealogist, and a picturesque chronicler of a family, you should study intensively the history of the locality in which your people lived and suffered and struggled and triumphed. Know the past of the immediate neighborhood. Inform yourself of the settlement of the larger area, the growth in population, conditions of life in earlier days, the hardships and perils before them, the raids and the wars which destroyed their homes on the outposts of civilization, their moral standards, their religious ideals and the love of freedom which found an abiding place in their hearts, from one generation to another.

From the smaller habitat enlarge your study to include that of the county, the state and the country. World history can aid in giving you a truer perspective of men and movements and ideals. It is as though you had ascended a high mountain, not without labor, to obtain a commanding view over the whole countryside. What a different outlook you have from when you were down in the valley, seeing only a short distance to the things close at hand, oblivious to the existence of other objects of great

importance hidden from your sight! From the loftier eminence you discern all things in their proper relationship to one another, and in their true proportions. The small do not appear very large because you are so close to them. The magnitude of the large is now plainly evident. Your vision of history is all-embracing and accurate and enlightening. And you see the people in their true historical setting.

Chapter 5 •

PATHS OF MIGRATION

Seaboard Settlements. What a thrilling story is that of the populating of America from the streams of peoples that flowed to its shores from many different lands of Europe. At the first the tiny colonies clung to the shore, to gain strength to launch their attack on the vast and unknown wilderness confronting them. Then with dogged determination and undaunted courage they moved into these new territories, establishing themselves after bitter conquests as the proud possessors of the hard-won homelands.

As the number of the colonies increased, the westward tide of settlement began to fill the river valleys, flow through the mountain passes and down the westward mountain slopes, following an ever-receding frontier, to found a new empire.

> Our frontier crawled west from the first seaport settlements, afoot, on horseback, in barges, or with slow wagon-trains. It crawled across the Alleghanies, down the great river valleys and up them yet again; and at last, in days of new transportation, it leaped across divides, from one river valley to another. Its history, at first so halting, came to be very swift —so swift that it worked great elisions in its own story.[1]

The Migration of the Peoples. Americans of today all have an intimate share in the heritage won for us by pioneers of the past.

> A dirge for the brave old pioneer!
> The patriarch of his tribe!
> He sleeps, no pompous pile marks where,
> No lines his deeds describe;
> They raised no stone above him here;
> Nor carved his deathless name —
> An empire is his sepulcher,
> His epitaph is fame.
>
> —O'Hara[2]

1. Emerson Hough: *The Passing of the Frontier,* 1920, p. 7.
2. Quoted in *History of Kentucky,* by Z. F. Smith, 1886, p. 359.

The romantic and thrilling story of the southward and westward migration of successive waves of transplanted European peoples throughout the entire course of the eighteenth century is the history of the growth and evolution of American democracy. Upon the American continent was wrought out, through almost superhuman daring, incredible hardship, and surpassing endurance, the formation of a new society. . . .

A series of dissolving views thrown upon the screen, picturing the successive episodes in the history of a single family as it wended its way southward along the eastern valleys, resolutely repulsed the sudden attack of the Indians, toiled painfully up the granite slopes of the Appalachians, and pitched down into the transmontane wilderness upon the western waters, would give the spectator a vivid conception, in miniature, of the westward movement. . . .

As the irresistible tide of migratory peoples swept ever southward and westward, seeking room for expansion and economic independence, a series of frontiers was gradually thrust out toward the wilderness in successive waves of irregular indentation. . . .

The trader was of incalculable service to the pioneer in first spying out the land and charting the trackless wilderness. The trail rudely marked by the buffalo became in time the Indian path and the trader's "trace"; and the pioneers upon the westward march, following the line of least resistance, cut out their roads along these very routes. . . .

Following far in the wake of these advance agents (the traders) . . . came the cattle-herder or rancher, who took advantage of the extensive pastures and ranges along the uplands and foot-hills to raise immense herds of cattle. Thus was formed what might be called a rancher's frontier, thrust out in advance of the ordinary farming settlements and serving as the first serious barrier against the Indian invasion. . . . Years before the influx into the Old Southwest of the tides of settlement from the northeast, the more adventurous struck straight westward in the wake of the fur-trader, and here and there erected the cattle-ranges beyond the farming frontier of the piedmont region. . . .

The farming frontier of the piedmont plateau constituted the real backbone of western settlement. The pioneering farmers, with the adventurous instincts of the hunter and the explorer, plunged deeper and ever deeper into the wilderness, lured on by the prospect of free and still richer lands in the dim interior. Settlements quickly sprang up in the neighborhood of military posts or rude forts established to serve as safeguards against hostile attack; and trade soon flourished between these settle-

ments and the eastern centers, following the trails of the trader and the more beaten paths of emigration. . . .

Here was a vast unappropriated region in the interior of a continent to be had for the seeking, and which served as lure and inspiration to the man daring enough to risk his all for its acquisition. . . .

The second determinative impulse of the pioneer civilization was *wanderlust* — the passionately inquisitive instinct of the hunter, the traveler, and the explorer. This restless class of nomadic wanderers was responsible in part for the royal proclamation of 1763. . . . The Long Hunters, taking their lives in their hands, fared boldly forth to a fabled hunter's paradise in the far-away wilderness, because they were driven by an irresistible desire of a Ponce de Leon or a De Soto to find out the truth about the unknown lands beyond. . . .

For the most part, however, it was the salutary instinct of the home-builder — the man with the ax, who made a little clearing in the forest and built there a rude cabin that he bravely defended at all risks against continued assaults — which, in defiance of every restraint, irresistibly thrust westward the thin and jagged line of the frontier. The ax and the surveyor's chain, along with the rifle and the hunting-knife, constituted the armorial bearings of the pioneer. With individual as with corporation, with explorer as with landlord, land-hunger was the master impulse of the era. . . .

The rolling of wave after wave of settlement westward across the American continent, with a reversion to primitive conditions along the line of the farthest frontier, and a marked rise in the scale of civilization at each successive stage of settlement, from the western limit to the eastern coast, exemplifies from one aspect the history of the American people during two centuries.[3]

Impassable Mountain Barriers. The seaboard and piedmont settlements spread westward to the wall of mountainous ranges. "As no break occurred in the great mountain system south of the Hudson and Mohawk valleys, the difficulties of cutting a passage through the towering wall of living green long proved an effective obstacle to the crossing of the grim mountain barrier."[4]

Streams of population flowed southwestward through the Valley of Virginia from Pennsylvania, Maryland and New Jersey, down into the Carolinas and Georgia. The

3. Archibald Henderson, *The Conquest of the Old Southwest,* 1920, pp. ix-xix.
4. *Ibid.,* p. 4.

next great movement in this westward expansion was the penetration of the mountain barriers and filling with people the great central valleys over the mountains. From varied national sources they came, these English, Scotch-Irish, Germans, Welsh and French Huguenots, to mingle now and form a new race of delightfully diverse elements. Pennsylvania with its ports became the great "distributing center" for the Germans and the Scotch-Irish.

> Such, then, were the rude and simple people in the back country of the Old Southwest — the deliberate and self-controlled English, the aggressive, land-mongering Scotch-Irish, the buoyant Welsh, the thrifty Germans, and the calculating Scotch. The lives they led were marked by independence of spirit, democratic instincts, and a forthright simplicity.[5]

Waterways as Highways. Often the cheapest, most direct and safest mode of travel in earlier times was by water. Land routes were often dangerous and difficult; boat travel was less fatiguing. It is not surprising that great waterways like the Ohio, St. Lawrence, Mississippi and Missouri Rivers and the Great Lakes became highways of settlement.

The Ohio River was navigable, and it flowed in general towards the west, and proved a great natural path of migration, leading the immigrants into the old Northwest area. Large flatboats were constructed, often forty or fifty feet in length, and prepared to carry whole families, stock and household possessions. "They were propelled downstream by oars or sweeps, and poled upstream." They were also built to provide protection against sudden attacks by hostile Indians. Thus the Ohio became highly important as an immigrant route.

> The natural outlet from Pennsylvania was the Ohio River. Emigrants from the western parts of the State floated down the Allegheny or Monongahela to the main stream. Those from farther east, including settlers from New Jersey, made the journey overland by one of several well-known roads. The best of these was a turnpike following the line that General Forbes had cut during the French and Indian War from Philadelphia to Pittsburgh by way of Lancaster and Bedford. Baltimore was

5. *Ibid.*, p. 28.

a favorite point of departure, and from it the route lay almost invariably along a turnpike to Cumberland on the upper Potomac, and thence by the National Road across the mountains to Wheeling. In later days this was the route chiefly taken from Virginia, although more southerly passes through the Blue Ridge were used as outlets to the Great Kanawha, the Big Sandy, and other streams flowing into the Ohio farther down.

Thus the lines of westward travel which in the East spread fanshape from Maine to Georgia converged on the Ohio; and that stream became, and for half a century remained, the great pathway of empire. Most of the emigrants had to cover long distances in overland travel before they reached the hospitable waterway; some, especially in earlier times, made the entire journey by land.

Hundreds of the very poor went afoot, carrying all their earthly possessions on their backs, or dragging them in rude carts. But the usual conveyance was the canvas-covered wagon —ancestor of the "prairie schooner" of the western plains — drawn over the rough and muddy roads by four, or even six, horses. In this vehicle the emigrants stowed their provisions, household furniture and utensils, agricultural implements, looms, seeds, medicines, and every sort of thing that the prudent householder expected to need, and for which he could find space. Extra horses or oxen sometimes drew an additional load: cattle, and even flocks of sheep, were occasionally driven ahead or behind by some members of the family.

In the years of heaviest migration the highways converging on Pittsburgh and Wheeling were fairly crowded with westward-flowing traffic. As a rule several families, perhaps from the same neighborhood in the old home, traveled; and in any case the chance acquaintances of the road and of the wayside inns broke the loneliness of the journey. There were wonderful things to be seen, and every day brought novel experiences. But exposure and illness, dread of Indian attacks, mishaps of every sort, and the awful sense of isolation and the uncertainty of the future, caused many a man's stout heart to quail, and brought anguish unspeakable to brave women. Of such joys and sorrows, however, is a frontier existence compounded; and of the growing thousands who turned their faces toward the setting sun, comparatively few yielded to discouragement and went back East. Those who did were usually the land speculators and people of weak, irresolute, or shiftless character.[6]

Danger from Indians. One grave danger has not been mentioned — the Indians. From the moment when the slow-moving flatboat passed beyond the protection of a white settle-

6. Frederic Austin Ogg: *The Old Northwest,* 1920, pp. 103-105.

ment, it was liable to be fired on, by day or by night, by redskins; and the better-built boats were so constructed as to be at least partially bullet-proof. Sometimes extra timber was used to give safety; sometimes the cargo was specially placed with that aim in view. The Indians rarely went beyond the water's edge. Their favorite ruse was to cause captive or renegade whites to run along the bank imploring to be saved. When a boat had been decoyed ashore, and perhaps a landing had been made, the savages would pour a murderous fire on the voyagers. This practice became so common that pioneer boats "shunned the whites who hailed them from the shores as they would have shunned the Indians," and as a consequence many whites escaping from the Indians in the interior were refused succor and left to die.[7]

The Great Lakes comprise the world's greatest inland waterway. Many emigrants took boat on Lake Erie to sail the first part of their western journey. Newel Knight tells how his family made the first lap of their trip to Missouri by boat on the Lakes.

Cumberland Gap. The water courses and Indian trails formed the first pathways into the interior for the white man. The first important migration was by Boone's Road and Cumberland Gap. Situated at the southeastern corner of the present State of Kentucky, it proved the favorite gateway into the Ohio Valley. Pioneers from Virginia or North Carolina passed through it to the Ohio around Cincinnati or Louisville; or they might spread out fan-like to Tennessee and the South.

Routes from New England. From New England and the northern states emigrants found there were other suitable paths of migration to the west. Prior to 1825, when the Erie Canal was opened, they used these three main avenues: Some followed the Mohawk and Genesee turnpikes across central New York to Lake Erie, a route which led directly to the Western Reserve. Others passed over the Catskill turnpike from the Hudson to the headwaters of the Allegheny, then down it to the Ohio. The remainder took boat from Boston to New York, Philadelphia or Baltimore, and thence over the southerly route to the Ohio River.

7. *Ibid.*, p. 108.

Great Migration Trails. It would be well, in preparation for your genealogical research, to obtain a good map and on it locate some of the more well known paths of migration, such as The Wilderness Road, the Santa Fe Trail, the Oregon Trail, the Mormon Trail, etc. If your pioneer forefathers moved westward before the railroad, they probably came over one of these noted trails.

The Santa Fe Trail was in its day of greatest popularity the main path of commerce between our western frontier and the Spanish towns and civilization of the Southwest. Commencing in 1822 it eventually became a great wagon trail with wagons and mules and later oxen traveling over it in great numbers. It passed through the great valley of the Arkansas by an easy grade and direct course to one of the original markets of America.

Lewis and Clark were the explorers of another great route, that following the Missouri River and thence into the Northwest. This became one of the first of our notable frontier roads. Over it many men from the eastern settlements took the westbound trail. The Oregon Trail followed by way of the Missouri up the Platte River, thence across the mountains. "The fur traders used it, the Forty-Niners used it, the cattlemen used it in part, the railroad used it, and lastly the settlers and farmers used it most of all."

> The first great caravans of the Platte Valley, when the wagon-trains went out hundreds strong, were not the same as the scattering cavalcade of the fur hunters, not the same as the ox-trains and mule-trains of the Santa Fe traffic. The men who wore the deepest wheel marks of the Oregon Trail were neither trading nor trapping men, but home-building men — the first real emigrants to go West with the intent of making homes beyond the Rockies. . . . before the Forty-Niners were heard of, farmers, home-builders, emigrants, men with their families, men with household goods, were steadily passing out for the far-off and unknown country of Oregon. . . .
>
> Men began to head out for that far-away country beyond the Rockies. Not a few scattered bands, but very many, passed up the valley of the Platte. There began a tremendous trek of thousands of men who wanted homes somewhere out beyond the frontier. . . .
>
> Our national horizon extended immeasurably along that dusty way. In the use of the Oregon Trail we first began to be

great. The chief figure of the American West, the figure of the ages, is not the long-haired, fringed-legging man riding a raw-boned pony, but the gaunt and sad-faced woman sitting on the front seat of the wagon, following her lord where he might lead, her face hidden in the same ragged sun-bonnet which had crossed the Appalachians and the Missouri long before. That was America, my brethren! There was the seed of America's wealth. There was the great romance of all America — the woman in the sunbonnet; and not, after all, the hero with the rifle across his saddle horn. Who has written her story? Who has painted her picture?[8]

Conditions of Pioneer Life. Some adventurous pioneers left the settlements behind them, and made their homes in isolated places. Most found it more prudent to live in or near other pioneer neighbors. It was needful to build a fort for protection against hostile Indians. Adequate drinking water was an essential, hence flowing springs became favorite sites of settlements. The first task was to clear a few acres of ground and build a cabin, with a strip of open ground around it to give protection against wild animals and wilder Indians. Fields must be cleared for cultivation. Neighbors usually helped with the heavy timbers for the framework and walls of the cabin. The walls were usually made of logs, notched together at the corners, and the spaces filled with moss, clay or covered with bark. Frequently there was only a dirt floor; and commonly only one door.

The first quality for which the life of the frontier called was untiring industry. It was possible, of course, to eke out an existence by hunting, fishing, petty trading, and garnering the fruits which Nature supplied without man's assistance. And many pioneers in whom the roving instinct was strong went on from year to year in this hand-to-mouth fashion. But the settler who expected to be a real home builder, to gain some measure of wealth, to give his children a larger opportunity in life, must be prepared to work, to plan, to economize, and to sacrifice. The forests had to be felled; the great logs had to be rolled together and burned; crops of maize, tobacco, oats, and cane needed to be planted, cultivated, and harvested; live stock to be housed and fed; fences and barns to be built; pork, beef, grain, whiskey, and other products to be prepared for market, and perhaps carried scores of miles to a place of shipment.

8. Emerson Hough: *The Passing of the Frontier,* 1920, pp. 91-94.

> All these things had to be done under conditions of exceptional difficulty. The settler never knew what night his place would be raided by marauding redskins, who would be lenient indeed if they merely carried off part of his cattle or burned his barn. Any morning he might peer out of the "port hole" above the cabin door to see skulking figures awaiting their chance. Sickness, too, was a menace and a terror. Picture the horrors of isolation in times of emergency — wife or child suddenly taken desperately ill, and no physician within a hundred miles; husband or son hovering between life or death as the result of injury by a falling tree, a wild beast, a venomous snake, an accidental gun-shot, or the tomahawk of a prowling Indian. Who shall describe the anxiety, the agony, which in some measure must have been the lot of every frontier family.[9]

Mormon Pioneers and Colonizers. A migration unique in the annals of America is that of the Mormons. From the western bank of the Mississippi River their leader and President, Joseph Smith, Jr., envisioned the time when the Saints would suffer much affliction and be driven to the

9. Frederic Austin Ogg: *The Old Northwest,* 1920, pp. 118-119.

PIONEER TRAIN ON MARCH TO THE WEST

Rocky Mountains. Because of bitter persecution many would apostatize, and many would be killed by their persecutors or lose their lives by exposure or disease. But the faithful survivors, in their new home, would make settlements and build cities, and "see the Saints become a mighty people in the midst of the Rocky Mountains."

How in fulfilment this people did endure mob violence and the martyrdom of their leaders, and were forcibly driven from their homes in Nauvoo and neighborhood; how they made the long journey to Utah over the Mormon Pioneer Trail, leaving many a grave alongside as its markers, how they built their homes in a then deserted and empty region, how heroically they set about colonizing "the waste places of Zion," — that is a story now known to all.

Immediately after their arrival in the Salt Lake Valley the pioneers took steps to found new settlements in a grand scheme of colonization which included regions now located in the states of Utah, Idaho, Nevada, California, Colorado, Arizona and New Mexico. The results have challenged the admiration of the world, and marked Brigham Young as one of its greatest colonizers, and the Latter-day Saint people as pre-eminent in that field. Later groups founded colonies in Wyoming, Oregon, Canada and old Mexico. Their leaders wisely directed where settlements should be made. Their followers — men and women with supreme courage and indomitable will — translated these plans into actual settlements that grew and flourished and multiplied.

The sites chosen were in most cases then "barren and desolate, cheerless and forbidding in the extreme." But the eye of faith beheld that thriving towns and cities would replace the desert wastelands and provide homes for a happy people. And this dream, with many encouraging evidences for the future, is still in process of fulfilment. The men and women who had made their way across the plains with ox team or handcart, from their homes in the eastern country or from foreign lands, were of a stamina to make the desert blossom as the rose.

Water, always at a premium, was the great life-giving element. Spots must be selected where a river, stream or spring made it possible for life to exist and crops to grow

and mature. By the magic of irrigation soil naturally fertile produced at the touch of moisture verdant and abundant yields. Hordes of crickets came and devoured the crops, but were vanquished by the sea gulls, and the settlers survived in triumph.

Strength from Struggle. But the hardships were many and severe for human beings to undergo, particularly as many were not inured by previous experience in the strenuous ways of carving homes in the wilderness. Countless pioneer sagas could be sung of families, armed with faith, who conquered the waste places and transformed the thirsty land into pleasant places.

In that desperate and long-continued struggle the work was hard and bodies soon grew old. Discouragements came in unending crescendo until weaklings surrendered, and only those of faith firm as granite could endure. Church leaders, by example and stimulating teaching, gave constant encouragement to hold on and conquer. Then there were the Indian dangers — ever present in many communities. Each settlement must have its stockade or fort, to be manned in time of Indian alarm. Indian risings did occur at intervals and took their toll of isolated settlers in sudden and stealthy forays. In times of Indian wars the embattled colonists in the militia went forth to defend their homes.

The rigors of pioneer life did eliminate many. Others triumphed over every obstacle. The victorious ones may have been immigrants fresh from the city life of the old world or those descended from one to ten generations of pioneers and colonizers, patriots and revolutionary sires rooted long in America. This life of subduing the wastelands called forth and tested their brain and mettle and brawn. Nature rewarded generously the bodies and spirits of this new pioneer race with physical and mental vigor, a tenacious will and a triumphant faith.

Said the gifted David Starr Jordan: "A young man can have no nobler ancestry than one made up of men and women who have worked for a living and who have given honest work. The instinct of industry runs in the blood. The industry engendered by the last generation is still in

your veins. Sons and daughters of the western pioneers, yours is the best blood of the realm."

And the prophetic Isaiah proclaimed long ago:

> Strengthen ye the weak hands, and confirm the feeble knees.
>
> Say to them that are of a fearful heart, Be strong; fear not. . . . for in the wilderness shall water break out, and streams in the desert.
>
> And the parched ground shall become a pool and the thirsty land springs of water. (See *Isaiah* 35:1-4, 6-7.)

Chapter 6 •

IN WAR AND IN PEACE

History is the handmaid of genealogy, and serves her well and faithfully. Despite this there are genealogists who would totally ignore the service of history to their cause, and never call upon it for help in any of their efforts to recover the records of the people of the past. But the wise genealogist will become thoroughly informed on the history and the topography and the attitudes of mind of the people of the areas where the families of his interest lived.

Wars could uproot whole communities and cause them to be transplanted to a far country. Peace could heal the wounds of war, and bring about a friendly intermingling and even intermarriages of those who were former enemies. War can inflame the minds and sow hatreds among peaceful neighbors; and the bitter harvest can leave rankling animosities for decades to come. With peace can come prosperity and good will. Yet whether in peace or war, the noble qualities of men and women shine forth to encourage and inspire.

The Mohawk Valley. Take, for example, the people of the Mohawk Valley in New York. After much research and careful sifting, Alexander C. Casselman wrote an able paper on "The German United Empire Loyalists of the County of Dundas," in Ontario, Canada. We quote some excerpts from that article.

> Only those who know something of the thrift and energy of their descendants in Eastern Ontario along the St. Lawrence can form any idea of the progress made by their ancestors in the Mohawk Valley. Situated on the rich alluvial flats, the finest and most fertile lands in the Province, they soon became rich and prosperous. The gentle sloping hills and winding river formed a picturesque scene that must have reminded them (the Palatines) of their old home on the Rhine. But the spoiler of their vine-cottage in the Palantinate, finds them even in the valley of the Hudson. England and France were soon to engage

in the final struggle for the possession of this continent. In November, 1757, Belletre with his French and Indians swept through the valley, and burned every house and barn on the north side of the Mohawk. The majority of the settlers saved their lives by crossing the river and entering the fort, but forty were killed, and more than a hundred carried away as prisoners. The south side was visited next year by another war party. In this raid fewer were killed but the destruction of property was as great.

It was fortunate for Britain that a man of the ability and integrity of Sir William Johnston lived on the Mohawk. He secured and retained the good will and devotion not only of the Indians but also of the Palatines. After Canada was taken by the British, quietness and happiness reigned on the Mohawk for twelve years. But there were signs of the coming storm that was to devastate this beautiful valley, and again drive the Palatines from their homes when the fortunes of war went against them. . . .

The Palatines were divided in their opinion but the majority were loyal. . . . In December, 1775, Philip Schuyler with 4,000 New England troops was sent to disarm the Loyalists on the Mohawk, and to exact assurance of neutrality from Sir John Johnston and his friends. . . . Under pretense that all arms were not given up, since the Highlanders kept their dirks, he declared the agreement broken and gave free license for his followers to plunder. The cattle, horses, pigs, and poultry needed, belonging to the Loyalists, were taken; the church was looted. . . . For this Schuyler received the thanks of Congress.

Thus in direct violation of a solemn agreement was the destruction of property on the Mohawk begun by the rebels. Could the authors of such outrages expect any mercy from Sir John Johnston, from John Butler and his son, Walter Butler, and their followers, when they swept down on this valley again and again during the war, when they returned to their old homes simply to despoil the spoilers now in possession?

Sir John after being subjected to petty annoyances all winter, heard from his friends in Albany that Schuyler intended to release him from his parole, and at the same time take him prisoner. Losing no time he hurriedly buried his papers, and . . . gathered about 200 followers and started by an unfrequented route to Montreal. They arrived there the last week of June, the day after the city, recently evacuated by the rebel invaders, was entered by Sir Guy Carleton. On the journey they had suffered severely from hunger, as they could not in their haste prepare supplies for nineteen days; and soon their principal food had been leeks and the young leaves of the beech.

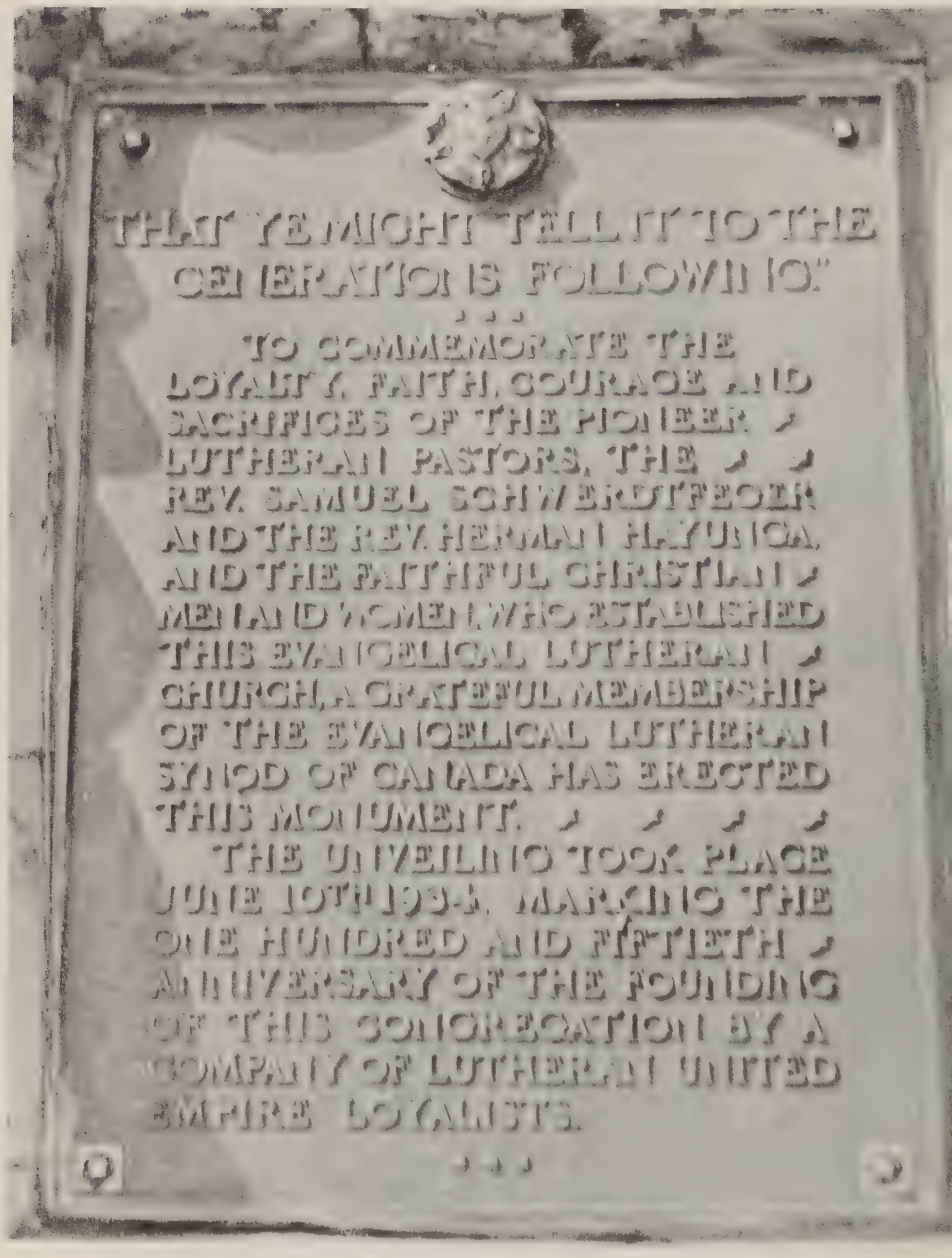
During the last days of the toilsome march many from exhaustion fell by the way. The Indians of Caughnawaga were sent to the rescue. All were brought in safe to Montreal. . . .

English Settlements in Canada. As soon as Sir John arrived in Montreal scouts were sent out to the Mohawk to show the way to those who wished to come. . . . On July 7th Sir John Johnston was granted the privilege of raising a battalion from among his followers and the Loyalists around Johnstown on the Mohawk. This battalion was called "The King's Royal Regiment of New York," or "The Royal Yorkers," or "Royal Greens." Recruiting went on and in the fall the battalion was complete. In 1780 another battalion was formed. A very large number, in fact the majority, of each of these battalions were Palatines. Butler's Rangers also contained not a few Palatines. A very moderate estimate places the number of Palatines who served in the various corps and who settled in Dundas and adjoining counties at about 600. . . . How many lost their lives in the hazardous enterprises that the corps took part in, or how many died in prison or were hanged as spies, is not known, but the number must have been considerable. . . .

In the spring of 1784 the several regiments were settled upon the lands allotted to them along the banks of the St. Lawrence, from Charlottenburg in Glengarry to the Bay of Quinte. The future homes of these vigorous pioneers were not determined by chance. . . . The Highland Roman Catholics were placed farthest east beside their French co-religionists; west of them the Scotch Presbyterians; then the Palatines — some Lutherans, some Presbyterians, speaking a different language and forming a barrier between the English to the west, and the Scotch and French to the east. Thus was laid the foundation of the Ontario that was yet to be, the common bond being the love of British institutions, which is as strong today in their descendants. . . .

The Palatines were not novices at clearing away the forest and bringing the land quickly under cultivation. They had readily become the most serviceable and reliable of soldiers; cut off from home and family, they had under Sir John Johnston and the Butlers for seven years held the rebels at bay in Central New York and swept the country in raid after raid from Oswego to the borders of Pennsylvania — yet now they showed that they had not forgotten the arts of peace. They returned to the implements of husbandry and won in the new field victories not less splendid than their triumphs amid the ruins of their old homes. They were aided for two years by supplies from the government and in the third year were not only self-sustaining but actually had grain for export. Although settled in the wilderness far from centres of population, they knew something

MONUMENT TO PIONEER LUTHERANS OF WILLIAMSBURG



INSCRIPTION TO LUTHERAN UNITED EMPIRE LOYALISTS

of the advantage of older settlements. To acquire such advantages as soon as possible was their aim from the beginning.

It is worthy of note that the first Protestant church in the Province of Canada was built by the Lutheran Palatines on the banks of the St. Lawrence about three miles below the present village of Morrisburg. It was commenced in 1789 and finished the next year. The first pastor was Rev. Samuel Schwerdfeger, who along with his family was imprisoned by the rebels for his persistence in exhorting his flock on the Mohawk to retain their allegiance to their King.

The hardy Palatines now after four migrations were forced to new homes for themselves out of the primeval forests of North America. The growth of the settlement, the individual experiences, the persistent and effective defence of their new homes against the invading enemy in 1813, their wise and loyal efforts for constitutional reform in 1837, all form important chapters in the development of that happy, prosperous, progressive and intelligent people that now enjoy and prize the privileges so dearly bought by their ancestors more than a hundred years ago.[1]

New Englanders Move Westward. Many soldiers from the New England area served in army units which saw action to the west. During that experience they beheld new and attractive unsettled land, and after the peace they remembered and sought it out to make it their homes. The history of families as they moved westward with the advance of civilization shows them following rather definite trends. Those from Connecticut and Rhode Island and Massachusetts moved to the unpopulated districts, either to the north in New Hampshire or Vermont or even Maine, or to the west into New York, Pennsylvania, Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Michigan or Wisconsin. Frequently a household would tarry only a few brief years at one stop, just long enough to make a clearing in the forest and erect a rude house; then it would join the western tide to make another clearing and another log house.

The Solomon Mack family were first in Salisbury, Massachusetts; then in Lyme, Connecticut. Solomon was a soldier in the French and Indian War, and obtained land in New York near Lake Champlain, in the area where he had seen military service. Later he lived in New Hampshire,

1. J. Smyth Carter: *The Story of Dundas,* 1784-1904, pp. 33-37.

Massachusetts and in Vermont. One of his children, born in New Hampshire, lived in western New York, then in Ohio, Missouri and Illinois where she died. A son was a captain and a colonel; after living in Vermont he was a pioneer of Pontiac, Michigan. His son traded with the Indians and made his home in Illinois. Descendants of all the families are now widely scattered throughout the west.

Virginia Land Bounties. "To stimulate enlistments and to give reward for military service, the government issued warrants for grants of land to ex-service men. Thus, after the French and Indian War, 1754-1763, land bounties were given as follows:

To each field officer	5,000 acres
To each non-commissioned officer	200 acres
To each captain	3,000 acres
To each subaltern	2,000 acres
To each private	50 acres

"Application could be made for this land wherever there was public domain unoccupied. Many obtained grants in North Carolina. Up until 1775 land surveys in Kentucky had been principally for veterans of the French and Indian War.

"Similar inducements were offered to soldiers participating in the Revolutionary War. Virginia had vast resources in unoccupied land, and was more generous than other states on that account. In 1783 she yielded all her rights to the territory northwest of the Ohio River to be used for grants by Congress. The entire area southeast of the Ohio River and falling within the territory bounded by the Green River to its head, thence to the Cumberland Mountains, then along these mountains and the North Carolina line to the Tennessee River, and thence to the Ohio and along it to the mouth of the Green River, was reserved by law for Virginia troops entitled to land grants. Until 1797 no other person than a soldier could enter a survey within this great reservation. It was enacted that officers or soldiers or sailors who should serve to the end of the war, or

their heirs or legal representatives, in case of their death, should be entitled to receive the quantity of land listed in the first column below. Later, for officers these amounts under certain circumstances were increased by one-third to the amounts in the second column.

VIRGINIA BOUNTY ALLOTMENTS

Major-Generals received	15,000 to 17,500 acres
Brigadier-Generals received	10,000 acres & upwards
Colonels received	5,000 to 8,888 acres
Lieutenant-Colonels received	4,500 to 6,666 acres
Majors received	4,000 to 5,333 acres
Surgeons and Surgeons' Mates received	2,666 to 8,000 acres
Captains received	3,000 to 4,666 acres
Subalterns (Lts., Ens., Cornets) received	2,000 to 2,666 acres
Non-commissioned officers received	400 acres
Soldiers and Sailors received	200 acres

"When any officer, soldier or sailor was killed or died in service, his heirs or legal representatives became entitled to receive the same quantity of land as would have been due the one in service, had he survived.

"Most of these surveys were made between 1782 and 1785, when further surveying was suspended owing to the danger of Indian attacks in this military reservation. By the time quiet was restored Kentucky had become a state, and no further Virginia grants were made there after 1792. In 1844, 650,000 acres of land warrants still remained unlocated."[2]

Settlements by Families of Soldiers. Owing to the constant westward sweep of families it is an ever-present problem to the genealogist to find out where the sons of the families settled after their migration from their home state. If they were soldiers of the War of the Revolution, entitled to a grant of land for military service, this fact may offer a suggestion where to begin the search. There are published indexes of military grants for some of the states, especially for Kentucky, which are extremely useful.

There was also a decided tendency for close relatives, as brothers and sisters and cousins of servicemen to move

2. *Finding Your Forefathers in America,* pp. 403-404.

with and settle alongside them. Therefore if the soldier's new residence can be located this may lead to unlocking the mystery of the whereabouts of the whole family group, leading into the county and other records for that locality.

The example of the group migration of the descendants of Major John Hardin cited in Chapter 4 is a good indication of how this could occur. They loaded their families upon large boats and moved together to the promised land they were seeking. Another reason for their traveling in rather extensive family groups was for better protection against Indian attacks.

Peace Treaties Erase Barriers. So long as the French held control of the heart of America, geographically, and they and their Indian allies were at war with the English colonies, there was little chance for westward expansion by the latter. With the peace treaty of 1763, ceding this territory to the British, that obstacle was removed. Only Indian enemies remained to the west. Wars with them were followed by peace treaties, and these although of smaller scope and involving smaller landed areas, had a similar erasing effect, permitting the colonization of districts formerly out of bounds to them. The acquisition of Florida, and later, the peace concluding the war with Mexico, removed Spanish opponents from the arena of settlement, and a whole new western empire became available for colonization.

Seeking a Landed Domain. Small wonder if thereafter America became known throughout Europe as the country where land was plentiful, and where landless emigrants from the old country might soon become the proud possessors of landed domains such as one of the aristocracy at home might envy. Actually this opportunity for obtaining land, through the Homestead Act and otherwise, was a great attraction to entice old world peoples to our shores. Almost like a fairy tale reads the story of poor immigrant boys who became landed proprietors and attained in later years to opulence, bequeathing to their children a landed estate they could never have dreamed of owning had they not come to America.

It is of course realized that between these two extremes of the poor emigrant and the rich landowner there was a long period of hard labor and struggle against adversity and privation, drouths or floods, the long and hard task of making a clearing in the forest or braving the scorching sun and the hard winds or the cold winters of the unwooded plains. It was an unending contest with the forces of nature and often with lawless men, but it was indeed a contest that held out encouraging hope.

The California Gold Rush. Wars had a habit of interrupting the even and ordinary course of events. So also did special events such as the news of the discovery of gold in California. Gold dust was like a loadstone instantly attracting adventuresome persons from all over the land. These swarmed into the goldfields, entering into a strange, wild and violent type of life utterly foreign to that which they had experienced in the quiet and peaceable paths of home. Characters of all descriptions were suddenly thrust into violent contact, and that before law and order were firmly established. Not all survived, as is demonstrated every day in western dramas over the TV sets. But not all perished in violent gun-play nor in lynchings or Indian attacks or at the hands of ruthless gangsters. Many who came seeking the precious metal found a habitation in the West and things in life more precious than gold or silver. Eventually they became co-founders of a great commonwealth, and left their mark upon the history and development of a vast new area. The saga of the building of the west is as thrilling a story as ever was that of the first colonists to America, and will yet be fittingly and justly told in truer terms than in those to which we are now so constantly accustomed.

Important to the genealogist who would undertake to trace out all the descendants of today of an immigrant ancestor of the 1600's, is the fact that some of his progeny will abruptly disappear from his eastern haunts, and will never be heard of again in that vicinity. A comprehensive knowledge of our history will teach him likely places to look for those who suddenly dropped out of sight, and the type of records to expect to find in such turbulent early times.

Industrialization of Quiet Areas. The machine age and the rapid growth of industrial plants has utterly changed former peaceful and quiet rural countrysides into congested centers of population, totally unlike their former appearance. The rush of city life has replaced the placid farm life of yesteryear. Hundreds of thousands of busy workers swarm over the maze of streets and into the hum of huge industrial plants that hide beneath them the sites of farm homes and plowed fields and the wells with their old oaken buckets inviting to the thirsty worker or traveler. A new layer of life has been literally spread over that which once existed there.

To find records of a forefather in the Pittsburgh or New York or Philadelphia of our day may appear to be an utterly impossible task, like searching for the proverbial needle in a haystack. There are so many people. But the genealogist must realize from his knowledge of the history of that neighborhood that it was not always thus. There was a time when the modest little courthouse of former days held the records of most of the scattered families who pioneered that sparsely inhabited and lonely locality. That simplifies the task for you, does it not?

Modern Travel Facilities. Formerly, when families moved apart, perhaps into another state, they might never expect to see one another again in life. Distance was a great barrier, an effectual separator of families. Instances are plentiful of the children of brothers and sisters being complete strangers to one another, who never looked upon the faces of their first cousins. In most families there were the "lost tribes" made up of the sections which migrated from the parental roof and never returned. Whither they were none but they themselves knew.

Today all has changed, at least as regards distances and travel time and convenience. No place in America is very far from any other, in view of present opportunities of getting places quickly. Families probably scatter more widely today than ever before, but whether in the far places of the United States or in foreign lands, it is comparatively easy to keep in constant touch by air mail and air travel, by

telephone or telegraph, and personal visits made possible by comfortable cars and paved highways. It should be difficult to have any "lost tribes" of the family in our day.

By the same token, with modern facilities, it should be far easier to establish contact with relatives, near and remote, and to compile complete and accurate family genealogies of descendants of a common forefather than ever before in history.

The Microfilming of Records. Modern photography and the manufacture of precision cameras and durable film has made possible a marvel in the field of record gathering for genealogical research. The richest record repositories may now be quickly and inexpensively duplicated by the filming of their original volumes, until then the only ones in existence, and the copies brought to a genealogical center for the convenience of searchers. Reading machines have been perfected to the point of efficiency so that the public may use them without undue effort or eyestrain. Very valuable records to the genealogist, such as the Consolidated Index to the Vital Records of Connecticut, have been microfilmed. One copy was left at the Connecticut State Library, another made available to the public in our own Library, and from the negative (used only for duplication purposes) a number of copies, by consent of the State Librarian of Connecticut, have been printed in positive form for other libraries in the country.

An analysis of the latest microfilming report of the Film Editor of the Genealogical Society of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, which was dated October 1, 1958, reveals an astounding accomplishment. Records have been filmed in many of the States of America and in 14 foreign countries: Sweden, Great Britain (England, Ireland, Isle of Man, Scotland, Wales), Denmark, the Netherlands, Finland, Mexico, Germany, Norway, Canada, Switzerland, Iceland, France, Italy, and Belgium. There had been placed on film 276,192,000 pages of records, the equivalent of 920,640 volumes of 300 pages each. These are classified on 184,639 rolls of film each 100 feet in length, averaging from 8 to 20 pages per foot. There had

MICROFILMING FOR THE GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY

been used in the project up to that date 10,491 miles of film, mostly 35 mm in width.

And the end is not yet. With from 45-60 cameras in operation in all these many fields, a constant stream of records is coming to our Library for free use by the public. Surely never has the time been so opportune for genealogical research and the compiling of family histories.

Chapter 7 •

ENRICHING A MEAGER RECORD

In some of the first genealogies published it would almost seem that the authors deliberately sought to make their records as statistical and dry and uninteresting as possible. Only names and dates and the facts of relationship were given. All items of human interest and of character delineating incidents were omitted. Only the bare skeleton of a family history remained. To make the record still more forbidding many words in the account were abbreviated, and this increased the difficulty of understanding the explanation given.

Even today in Germany genealogical records as printed are highly condensed. Standard symbols are used for birth and christening, marriage and death and burial. Much factual information can thus be given in little space, and the cost of printing is lessened. But the most important things of all are left out.

Do not misunderstand. The vital facts of birth and marriage and death are indispensable for true identification. We must always have them, just as complete and authentic as possible. That is an excellent beginning, but only the beginning. A true family record must have life and interest and action and color. We must feel that the persons named were real, living and human individuals just as we are, with like hopes and aspirations and loves and prejudices, subject to errors or to noteworthy triumphs. They were indeed influenced by the events of their times, suffered in wars and in famines and during religious persecutions, but withal they were men and women and children with hearts.

It is to be hoped that mere statistical genealogies will no longer satisfy their compilers nor their readers.

The Bane of Brevity. Extreme conciseness in a meager genealogical record is death-dealing to interest, effectively destroying the fascination of the search. We may truly speak of the bane of brevity, if by that we mean the kind which deprives us of all life stories, character sketches, illustrations and even the verifying documents.

Here is one sample of an all too brief genealogical statement (with apologies to the author, an excellent gentleman, a Lutheran minister, and a good friend):

> 218 ELIZABETH TILLAPAUGH was born in the Geisenberg district December 17, 1797. She died May 26, 1848. She was married 3 times. Her first husband was a Canadian soldier named NELSON COLE. He was drowned in Lake Ontario in 1818. Their children (Cole):
>
> 666 Harrison
> 667 Nelson, 1818.
>
> Elizabeth then married ISAAC ABBOTT and there were 13 children born to them. We do not have the names of any of them. They probably live, or their descendants, in or near Jefferson county. Elizabeth married for her third husband a DE MOSS and they lived in Fulton, N.Y., where she probably died and is buried. Mrs. Marjorie A. Roberston of Phillipsburg, Kansas, a descendant of "Betsey" is our informant.

Under the number 667 on a later page we have the statement:

> 667 NELSON COLE was born in 1818 in Brownsville, Jefferson County, N. Y. He married CAROLINE BAILEY, born in Syracuse in 1826. They lived in Jefferson County. They had (Cole):

Then follow the names only of thirteen children. Only one is carried forward, a daughter Alice Cole, the grandmother of Mrs. Robertson.

Greater Accuracy from Greater Detail. Often the more meager the record the greater the opportunity for error to creep in. To obtain the enriching details which make records meaningful, more intensive research must be performed. This, if well done, will not only add to the interest by giving appealing life incidents, but will provide a greater insurance against mistakes. Thus the need is ever for more facts, and interesting ones.

On August 1, 1929 I answered a genealogical query in the *Boston Evening Transcript,* which bore the heading

LAUPERSWIL VILLAGE AND CHURCH

"Re. 8818. 2. CASSELMAN, DILLENBECK. M. A. S. P. July 24, 1929." This query proved to be from Miss Marjorie A. Spaulding, a charming schoolteacher of Phillipsburg, Kansas. She later married Lloyd J. Robertson. She was interested in tracing her Casselman and Dillenbeck lines; and these were both my lines as well. I wrote to the Boston *Transcript*:

> My information on the Dillenbeck family is as yet but fragmentary. The family descends from Martin Dillenbeck or Dallenbach who emigrated from Lauperswil, Bern, Switzerland, and came with the Palatine immigrants to New York in 1710. He had a brother, Johannes Dallenbach, residing in Zweibrucken on May 12, 1732.[1]
>
> "Martin Dilleback" was one of the volunteers for the expedition against Canada in 1711 from the settlement of Queensbury.[2]
>
> "Jerg Martin and Sara Catharina Dillenbach" had a daughter Anna Margretha, born I Aug. 1712, and baptized in St. Paul's Lutheran Church, at West Camp, N. Y., on 3 August, 1712.[3]
>
> He evidently married a second time, for he is said to have married Elizabeth, daughter of Hans Dedrick Casselman.
>
> He probably removed to Schoharie in 1712, and later he was one of the Stone Arabia patentees, October 10, 1723. As early as 1725 he settled on a lot 10 of the patent.
>
> His name stands first on a list preserved of the representatives of the Stone Arabia Lutheran Church, dated 1733. It is there spelled Martinus Dillenbach. Only four of those so listed were living December 29, 1770, and since he was not one of the survivors, he must have died previously.

We continued to exchange information on our common families and she sent me a very helpful mimeographed record of her Tillapaugh branch of this line. Once she visited me at the Genealogical Library.

In April of 1958 a letter came from Mrs. Harriet K. Mortson, of 1128 Pico Blvd., Santa Monica, Calif. Here are some of her comments:

1. See Faust and Brumbaugh: *List of Swiss Emigrants in the 18th Century to the American Colonies,* Vol. 2, p. 41.

2. *Documentary History of New York,* Vol. III, p. 571.

3. *Olde Ulster,* Vol. 3, p. 123.

My cousin, Mrs. Lloyd J. Robertson, now Mrs. Goode, of Phillipsburg, Kansas, had some correspondence with you some time ago, and I have copies of your correspondence with her. Unfortunately I did not know Mrs. Robertson at that time or I should have been able to be of some help on the Dillenbeck line, for there seem to be errors in the Dillenbeck book.

I am the daughter of Lois Cole Nichols, who is still living. She was the daughter of Nelson Cole and Harriet Post. Nelson was the son of Betsy Tillapaugh (Dillenbeck) and Sylvanus Cole who was drowned in the St. Lawrence waterway before his son Nelson was born — in 1818 he had always thought, but a family Bible which I have not seen gives his birth as 1814, and this seems the more correct date.

I believe the Dillenbeck record shows, as supplied by Marjorie Spaulding Robertson (above), that Betsy's first husband was Nelson and that he had two sons by her, Harrison and Nelson. This is not true. Betsy's husband was *Sylvanus* Cole, and they had but one child, Nelson. She later married Isaac Abbott and had 13 children by him — the first born April 6, 1819.

Do you have any record of Sylvanus Cole? He was on the Revolutionary Roster from Dutchess Co., New York, in the 3rd Reg. He enlisted with a Benjamin Cole. And in the census of 1790 we find Sylvanus in Dutchess Co., S. E. Town and he had several children, by a wife definitely not Betsy Tillapaugh. So that was a second marriage for him.

My grandfather Nelson Cole corresponded with various members of the Cole family — visited one, either a cousin or uncle in Michigan, and there were, my mother thinks, two of the Coles who visited them in Wisconsin when she was a little girl.

Do you have any records of the family before they came to America?

In reply I sent her photographic copies of the pedigree charts I had compiled on the ancestry of Jerg Martin Dallenbaugh, obtained by research in the original registers of the parish of Lauperswil, Switzerland; then requested the complete record of the children of Elisabeth or Betsy Tillapaugh and Isaac Abbott.

This she graciously sent, and it is a very complete record for our files. Likewise she sent a record of the descendants of Nelson Washington Cole, which began:

Nelson Washington Cole was born in Watertown, New York, Nov. 22, 1814, the only son of Sylvanus Cole, drowned in the St. Lawrence waterway before his son was born, and

Elizabeth (Betsy) Tillapaugh. Nelson died Feb. 20, 1903 at the home of his daughter, Lois Cole Nichols, in Darien, Wisconsin. He married Caroline Cheney Bailey, daughter of Jonathan and Sylva (Davis) Bailey, June 9, 1844, in Mottsville, N. Y.

Then follow the names and records of five children. Nelson Cole remarried, Nov. 25, 1855, in Minetto, N. Y., to Harriet Post, daughter of Martin and Esther (Miller) Post. The record of their six children was furnished, including that of Mrs. Mortson's own mother. It is now interesting to compare this account with the painfully meager and partially inaccurate one quoted at the beginning of this chapter.

Adding Life and Human Interest. Another meager and barren account could read: "Abraham Michaux married in Holland Susanne Rochet, daughter of Jean Rochet and his wife, Marie Trufet. They came to America with six children and settled at Manakin Town, on the James River, Virginia, where they reared a large family of sons and daughters." All true, every word of it, but how much has been left unsaid!

Let us try a more appealing approach.

From many lands they came, these founders of the new nation of America. Puritans and Pilgrims came by the thousands to escape the thraldom of religious oppression. Following the civil war in England and the beheading of King Charles I, many of the aristocratic cavaliers who had supported him in the field fled England and settled in Virginia and elsewhere. Courageous Scots fought on the losing side in a later civil war; thousands of these, escaping death and execution, found a haven of refuge in the American colonies. Numerous Irish came to escape famine and hardship and local oppresssion. The Swiss and the Germans, the Dutch and the Huguenots and numerous Northmen swarmed to the New World of freedom and opportunity.

One writer has said, "Every race brings to our western civilization a gift of its own." If anyone will study the prominent characteristics of the people who have come to America from various lands, he will be impressed with the truth of this saying. The hardy, indomitable and determined

Scotch-Irish were the frontiersmen and Indian fighters in the western expansion of civilization. The Huguenots, the Scandinavians, the Dutch and the Germans were more certainly the homemakers and the beautifiers of their surroundings. Having come to this land to escape religious and political oppression, all groups were determined to preserve their liberty, and those of all sections of the colonies united to maintain that freedom when war came.

Persecution of the Huguenots. Typical of the religious persecution is the story of the Protestants of France called the Huguenots. On more than one occasion whole congregations of these devoted religionists were slaughtered and left lying in their churches. After a long civil war, Henry IV, leader of the Huguenots, became the king of France. By the Edict of Nantes, in 1598, he granted toleration in worship to the Huguenots. Some time later he was stabbed to death, and his successors on the throne renewed the persecution. It was finally determined to force the Huguenots to deny their form of worship and return to the Catholic church or be exterminated.

Hundreds of thousands of them fled from France, taking refuge in Switzerland, Germany, Holland, South Africa and America. When the French rulers saw their most loyal and industrious and intelligent people fleeing the country, they issued strict orders forbidding them to leave. King Louis XIV of France, in 1685, revoked the Edict of Nantes which had legally entitled them to freedom to worship God as they chose. Huguenot pastors were given fifteen days in which to abjure their faith or flee the country. After that date any male Protestant caught attempting to emigrate from France was to be sentenced to hard labor at the galleys for life — a species of living death. Women so caught were to be given life imprisonment.

Soldiers of the king were sent into every community to be billeted in homes of Huguenots. There they committed all manner of offenses and brutally abused the inmates, men, women and children, to force them to deny their faith.

An Attempted Escape. At this time there lived in the city of Sedan a faithful Huguenot named Jean Rochet, with

his good wife, Marie Trufet. Many of their faith dwelt in this beautiful city, where they had a flourishing university and many churches, until these were wrested from them.

Jean and Marie Rochet had three daughters, one of whom was named Susanne. Two of the daughters managed to escape from persecution and death and worse into Holland, where they were kindly received by Christian friends. Unwilling that his remaining daughter's mind should be tainted by Catholic teachings, the father tried to send her also out of France. But this must be done in profound secret, for the watchful soldiers were everywhere on the border, closely searching the roads that led out of the country. Susanne bravely agreed to make the desperate venture, although it was a painful trial for her to leave her pleasant home and loving parents for a strange country.

Some devoted Huguenots disguised as women helped the poor refugees to attempt an escape. They took charge of Susanne and her cousin who had a little babe with her. They managed to escape from Sedan, silently stole past the guards of the king in the darkness of night, and were well on their way to the embarking place from which they hoped to sail for Holland.

As they waded through a stream Susanne's cousin stumbled on some rocks. She almost fell. Her babe was wakened and began to cry. The soldiers nearby heard the sound, detected them, rushed forward and captured the frightened refugees. They threw them in jail, where many indignities were heaped upon them. The cousin with her babe was forced to parade through the streets, assailed by the taunts, jibes and ridicule of the bystanders.

The "Little Night-Cap." After a time Susanne's father was allowed to take his daughter home. Meanwhile the two sisters who had found a safe kindly home in Amsterdam, were eager to have Susanne with them. They wrote to their father, entreating him to send her to them, but, fearful that the letter might be intercepted and read by enemies, they asked only that he send them "the little *night-cap*" they had left behind them when they went from Sedan.

The father knew exactly what was meant, and determined to risk still another attempt, despite the danger to all of them.

He had Susanne put in a large cask or barrel, then had the head of the cask fastened and hooped on, and marked as containing goods. The barrel was then delivered to a friendly sea captain, who had it carried aboard his ship. Before he could sail, officers of the king carefully searched the vessel, but they saw nothing suspicious about the barrel of goods. When they had at last gone, and the ship was safely away from shore, the barrel was opened and Susanne was lifted out of her narrow and dark prison.

God preserved her and brought her safely to Amsterdam, where she was received with great joy and thanksgiving by her sisters.

Off to the New World. For some years these three sisters lived in Holland, happy in the privilege of worshipping God according as they understood the teachings of their Bible. Yet they underwent many hardships, being deprived of the comfort of their home in France. Often their food was of the coarsest. Once when the father managed to visit them he found them eating the cheapest black bread in the country. It has been written of them, "Thus they lived for years in the exercise of great self-denial, rather than renounce their faith; but God gave them grace to endure great trials for conscience sake. One of them at least was to become the head of a long line of godly Protestants in the western world and He was fitting her for responsibility. The two older sisters married and moved to the West Indies. When grown, Susanne also married. Her husband, Abraham Michaux, was a good, industrious man, who also was a Huguenot refugee."

For some years this couple lived in Holland and by their industry and frugality saved sufficient money to make the voyage to America. The king of England had offered the Huguenot refugees an opportunity to settle in Virginia, granting them ten thousand acres of land. Abraham Michaux with his wife and six children embarked for America. There they soon found a home among other Pro-

testant French refugees at Manakin Town on the James River. There Abraham and his wife, the "Little Night-Cap," reared a large family of sons and daughters, from whom many of the most patriotic and God-fearing citizens of Virginia and the nation are descended. Today in our midst are thousands of the posterity of the "Little Night-Cap" who risked all that was dear to her for that "pearl of great price," religious fredom, which her descendants today enjoy in its fulness.

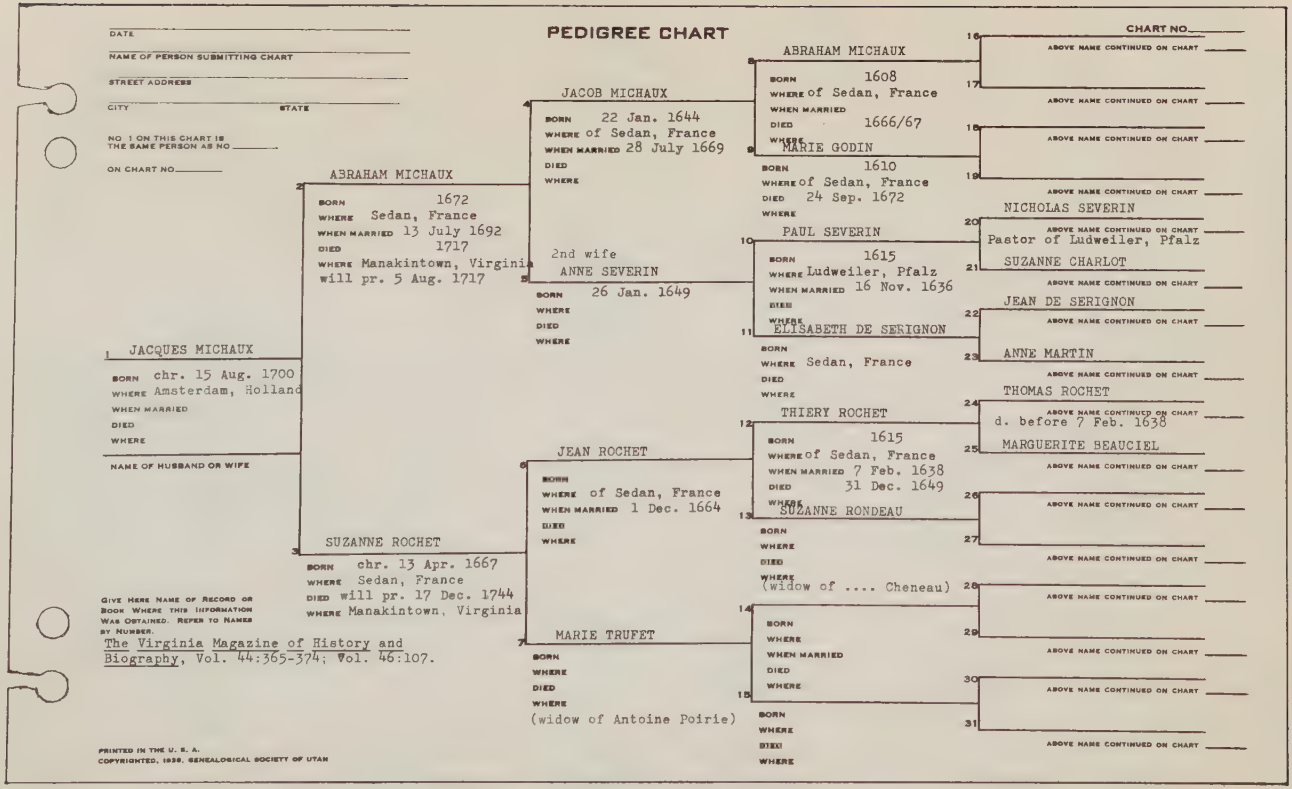
(See Baird: *The Huguenot Emigration to America,* vol. II (pp. 108-109; Foote: *The Huguenots,* pp. 541-545; *The Huguenots — Founders of Manakin, Va.,* vol. 6, pp. 113-117.)

The Family of Susanne Rochet. With all its human interest, this story is itself very meager when it comes to the parents and ancestry of this girl. But this has now fortunately been rectified. Additional details have been secured through research.

Research was undertaken in the registers of Sedan for the ancestors of Susanne Rochet and her husband, Abraham Michaux. The accompanying chart giving sixteen progenitors for them shows the result of that search. A report says:

"The data given above is taken from records of these families, sent by Pasteur U. Weiss, of the Societe de l'Histoire du Protestantisme Francais, to a Michaux descendant. . . . Pastor Weiss sent a very interesting letter from Paris, a part of which is as follows:

> It was necessary to go through all the registers of baptisms, marriages and burials, whose copies are in the library of our Huguenot Society — and to pick up all the Michaux, Severin, Rochet — so as to be able to find out those you are interested in. Those registers cover the years 1573-1608 (4 registers), and 1631-1682 (14 registers), leaving a big gap, as you see, between 1608 and 1631.
>
> No trace of *Michaux is* to be found in the registers from 1573 to 1608. But the three families you are interested in are represented by a great many entries in the registers from 1631 to 1682 . . . .



PEDIGREE CHART

DATE

NAME OF PERSON SUBMITTING CHART

STREET ADDRESS

CITY STATE

NO. 1 ON THIS CHART IS THE SAME PERSON AS NO.

ON CHART NO.

CHART NO.

1 JACQUES MICHAUX
BORN chr. 15 Aug. 1700
WHERE Amsterdam, Holland
WHEN MARRIED
DIED
WHERE
NAME OF HUSBAND OR WIFE

2 ABRAHAM MICHAUX
BORN 1672
WHERE Sedan, France
WHEN MARRIED 13 July 1692
DIED 1717
WHERE Manakintown, Virginia
will pr. 5 Aug. 1717

3 SUZANNE ROCHET
BORN chr. 13 Apr. 1667
WHERE Sedan, France
DIED will pr. 17 Dec. 1744
WHERE Manakintown, Virginia

4 JACOB MICHAUX
BORN 22 Jan. 1644
WHERE of Sedan, France
WHEN MARRIED 28 July 1669
DIED
WHERE

5 2nd wife
ANNE SEVERIN
BORN 26 Jan. 1649
WHERE
DIED
WHERE

6 JEAN ROCHET
BORN
WHERE of Sedan, France
WHEN MARRIED 1 Dec. 1664
DIED
WHERE

7 MARIE TRUFET
BORN
WHERE
DIED
WHERE
(widow of Antoine Poirie)

8 ABRAHAM MICHAUX
BORN 1608
WHERE of Sedan, France
WHEN MARRIED
DIED 1666/67
WHERE

9 MARIE GODIN
BORN 1610
WHERE of Sedan, France
DIED 24 Sep. 1672
WHERE

10 PAUL SEVERIN
BORN 1615
WHERE Ludweiler, Pfalz
WHEN MARRIED 16 Nov. 1636
DIED
WHERE

11 ELISABETH DE SERIGNON
BORN
WHERE Sedan, France
DIED
WHERE

12 THIERY ROCHET
BORN 1615
WHERE of Sedan, France
WHEN MARRIED 7 Feb. 1638
DIED 31 Dec. 1649
WHERE

13 SUZANNE RONDEAU
BORN
WHERE
DIED
WHERE
(widow of .... Cheneau)

14
BORN
WHERE
WHEN MARRIED
DIED
WHERE

15
BORN
WHERE
DIED
WHERE

16 ABOVE NAME CONTINUED ON CHART
17 ABOVE NAME CONTINUED ON CHART
18 ABOVE NAME CONTINUED ON CHART
19 ABOVE NAME CONTINUED ON CHART
20 NICHOLAS SEVERIN
ABOVE NAME CONTINUED ON CHART
Pastor of Ludweiler, Pfalz
21 SUZANNE CHARLOT
ABOVE NAME CONTINUED ON CHART
22 JEAN DE SERIGNON
ABOVE NAME CONTINUED ON CHART
23 ANNE MARTIN
ABOVE NAME CONTINUED ON CHART
24 THOMAS ROCHET
ABOVE NAME CONTINUED ON CHART
d. before 7 Feb. 1638
25 MARGUERITE BEAUCIEL
ABOVE NAME CONTINUED ON CHART
26 ABOVE NAME CONTINUED ON CHART
27 ABOVE NAME CONTINUED ON CHART
28 ABOVE NAME CONTINUED ON CHART
29 ABOVE NAME CONTINUED ON CHART
30 ABOVE NAME CONTINUED ON CHART
31 ABOVE NAME CONTINUED ON CHART

GIVE HERE NAME OF RECORD OR BOOK WHERE THIS INFORMATION WAS OBTAINED. REFER TO NAMES BY NUMBER.

The Virginia Magazine of History and Biography, Vol. 44:365-374; Vol. 46:107.

PRINTED IN THE U. S. A.
COPYRIGHTED, 1939, GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY OF UTAH

PEDIGREE CHART OF JACQUES MICHAUX

> Before Suzanne Rochet, daughter of Jean, married at Amsterdam (1692) Abraham Michaux, her younger sister Jeanne, as is shown by a new entry, had been married at London 1689, September 9, at the church of the French and Walloon refugees, called "Les Grecs," with Jacques Truffet, probably a relative of the first wife of Jean Rochet. So it may be that Jeanne Rochet decided her elder sister to settle in London.

An excellent article entitled "The Huguenot Abraham Michaux and Descendants," by Joseph D. Eggleston, from which the above excerpts were taken, was published in *The Virginia Magazine of History and Biography,* Oct. 1936, vol. 44:365-374; and in subsequent volumes. From the French Huguenot Church in Amsterdam came this report:

> Mr. Abraham Michaux has been inscribed Member of the French Church in Amsterdam: 28th Jany 1691. He married there with Suzanne Rochet: 13th July 1692. Their children were baptized as follows:
>
> | Anne | Jean | Isaac | Jacques |
> |---|---|---|---|
> | 7 May 1693. | 3 Jan. 1697. | 28 June 1699. | 15 Aug. 1700. |
>
> He left Amsterdam and went to London: 8 Mai 1701. The spelling of the names is just like they are found in the archives. (p. 370)

Abraham Michaux was granted 574 acres at Manakintowne, on the south side of James River, 2 Nov. 1705; this land he sold 1 Apr. 1707. On January 27, 1713 he was granted a patent of 850 acres; and on March 23, 1715, he received a patent for 230 acres. "Two years later he died, leaving a good estate to his family." His will was printed in the above-named article, and was dated 13th day of May 1717, and proved on August 5, 1717. It commences: "I Abraham Michaux being born in the City of Cedent in France 1672, now of Virginia in County of Henrico . . . ." He gives his wife Susanna 233 acres of his land at Manakin Town; and names children Jacob, John, Abraham, three eldest daughters Anne, Jane Magdalin and Susanna, daughter Olive Judi, and three youngest daughters Elizabeth, Ann Madlin and Easter Mary.

The will of his widow, Susanna (Rochet) Michaux was made March 22, 1740; and was proved Dec. 17, 1744. She outlived him many years. She bequeathed her plantation to her son John Paul Michaux.

In all they had thirteen children (see vol. 46, p. 107), nine of whom are known to have married. Some generations of their numerous descendants are given in this valuable article.

Chapter 8 •

HEROISM ON THE FRONTIER

The Lives of Intrepid Souls. In the winning of the West the pioneers were propelled by an insistent instinct to migrate farther and farther into the wilderness. They were in search of new homes and cheaper lands and uncramped freedom. They brought with them the ideals of their race. Often they built their churches and schools before they built their log houses. Many came fresh from the battlefields of the Revolutionary War, carrying the muskets with which they had helped to win independence.

But better than weapons of war they brought with them alert and vigorous minds and strong and healthy bodies. They brought also a devotion to freedom, invincible courage and a determination to conquer the dangers and difficulties of the frontier and build new homes for their families or die in the attempt. Many did die in this long-continued battle of the wilderness; but their efforts and sacrifices brought success.

We of today are their beneficiaries. We owe it to their memories not only to keep their graves forever green but also to keep in mind always their heroic deeds and the supreme sacrifice they made.

Living in Constant Peril. Every frontier settler in those days was inevitably a front-line soldier, and so also was each member of the family, women and children included. No one knew when the silence would be pierced by the fierce Indian war whoop and death might come streaking out of the forest upon the lone house in the little clearing.

The price they paid to win homes for us, their posterity, is shown in the story of William Hall, as quoted from his own narrative. He was a son of Major William Hall and Thankful Doak. Major Hall had received, for military service during the Revolution, a grant of land in Sumner

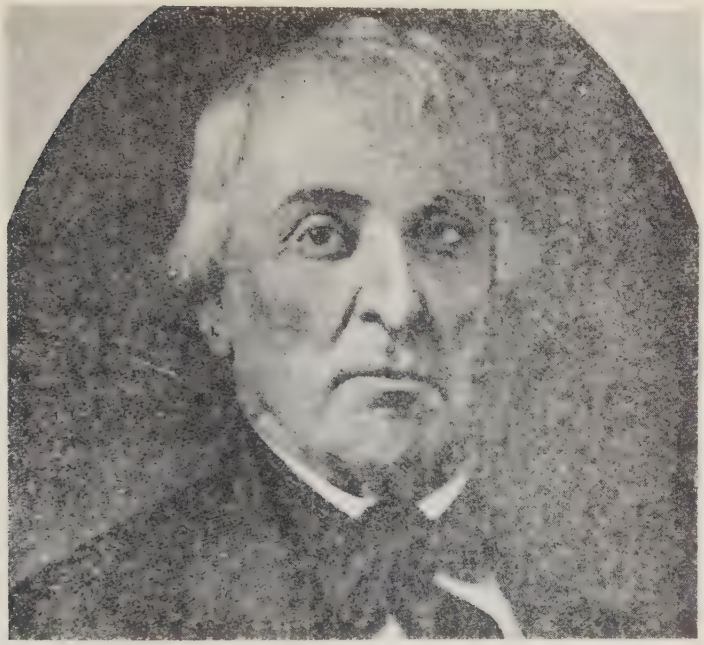
County, Tennessee, and removed to that county in 1784. He made his home near Bledsoe's Lick. A man of high character and wide influence, he was at once accorded a leading part in the affairs of the new community. But his leadership was to be of but short duration. This is the story as told by his son, William Hall:

"I was born in Surry County, North Carolina, in the year 1775, and my father sold his possessions in North Carolina in 1779, and started for Kentucky. He came on to New River, in Virginia, and purchased a tract of land and remained there till 1785. He did this in consequence of the times being so perilous and troublesome that he could not then get through the wilderness with his family. He sold his plantation there in the fall of 1785 and moved to Sumner County, Tennessee, which was made a county that year, arriving here on the 20th of November 1785.

"He settled near Bledsoe's Lick, on the spot where I am at present residing. Leaving his family at Bledsoe's Fort, he came out during that winter, put up buildings and moved his family to the place. In the spring of 1786 the Indians came and stole all his horses, twelve or fifteen in number. He then moved his family back to the fort, and continued there until the next fall. He then returned and lived here until in the summer of 1787, the Indian war having broke out during the summer of that year.

"My brother James was killed on the 3rd of June, in 1787, at this place, being the first white person killed in this section after the war broke out. The circumstances are these:

A Hairbreadth Escape. "James and myself went to a field at Mr. Gibson's, about a quarter of a mile from my father's houses, we having put our horses up there. The Indians, fifteen in number, had ambuscaded the road, ten lying behind some logs on the road, and five, about fifty yards further up in a treetop, at the gap in the pasture fence. The ten Indians behind the log let us pass them — I suppose because we were boys, probably intending to quietly tomahawk us. But after we passed the ten rose up with their tomahawks in their right hands and their guns



GOVERNOR WILLIAM HALL OF TENNESSEE

in their left. I was not noticing them, and my brother was close behind me. As I turned to speak to him about some corn with which to catch the horses, as we were near the fence, I saw the whole ten hemming us in. The case looked so hopeless that I never dreamed of resistance, and had concluded at once to surrender. But the next thing I saw two of them had struck my brother as he turned around, each striking their tomahawks into his brain one on each side of the forehead. Instantly seeing the case was hopeless. I sought to dodge the ten, when up rose the other five from the treetop. As I fled past them I was so near to them that some of them raised their tomahawks to strike me down.

"Dashing into the thick canebrake, close by which the road ran, two of them rushed after me. Being about thirteen years of age, and of course slimmer than they were, and withal very active, I soon found that, unencumbered with a gun or anything else, I could make my way through the thick cane faster than they could. The first misstep that

befell me, a grapevine caught me by the neck, threw me over backwards, and took off my hat, but, recovering myself, I still fled onward, gaining on them at every jump. I feared, at last, they would cut me off at the point of a ridge which I had to cross to get to my father's houses, since the thick cane terminated a little distance below, and I should there be compelled to leave it. I was watching one fellow, who was running along the hillside where the cane was thickest. As Heaven ordered it, a large tree had fallen right in his path, crushing the cane about in all directions, and forming an insurmountable obstacle, thus compelling him to go around at one end or the other. Fortunately, he took down towards me to get around the top, and by the time he had got to the end of it, I had already passed it. Consequently I had them the (length of) the whole tree behind me. They, however, ran me to within 100 yards of the house.

"They killed and scalped my poor brother, and then fled. As I got to the house half a dozen young men and as many young women were coming on a visit to my father's. The young men were all armed, and they at once jumped off their horses and ran back with me to where my brother was lying, and brought him in."

Men from the fort pursued the fleeing Indians, and by taking another path, came upon the Indians right in a creek, and wounded two of them.

"The whites brought back my poor brother's scalp, which had been tied to a pack, and likewise one of the tomahawks with which he had been killed, the blood still upon it. My father was not at home when my brother was killed, having been summoned to Nashville to attend a council General Robertson was holding with Little Owl and others of the Cherokee chiefs.

Attack on the Hall Family. "After my father returned from Nashville, three families of us residing out from the fort held a council as to whether we should spend the summer at the farms or go to the fort at Bledsoe's Lick. Our two neighbors were Messrs. Gibson and Harrison, and the former having no white family, it was agreed that the three should combine and hire each two young men to guard the farms through the season.

"From the 3rd of June, accordingly, the day after my brother was killed, to the 2nd day of August, we had no alarm. On that day the spies came in and advised my father to pack up at once and move to the station; that the Indians were at least thirty in number. We accordingly loaded up a sled and started for the fort. We started with the first load in the morning, my sister being alone on horseback, going to the fort to arrange things at the cabins as fast as they should arrive; and we had two men along, my brother and a Mr. Hickerson, to guard us. When about half a mile from my father's house, and crossing Defeated Creek, the horses became alarmed, the two I was driving turning so suddenly around as to nearly run over me. I said to the young men I was sure the horses smelt the Indians, but my brother insisted upon going forward, which we did, making four trips during the day.

"When we came late in the evening to make the last trip and take the family to the fort, five men went along to guard the family thither. We packed up when the sun was about two hours high, whites, negroes, and all, I still driving the horses, my little brother behind me on one of them. We had arranged it that we should go ahead as we had been doing all day, the two young men in advance of me and the sled.

"The Indians, forty or fifty in number, had arranged an ambuscade on both sides of the road for about 100 yards. As we went on, my brother and Hickerson in advance, a little dog belonging to my brother showed violent alarm on approaching a large ash tree that had fallen in the road. My brother was just in advance, and as he stopped a moment I stopped the horses to see what was the cause of the alarm evinced by the dog. My brother took a step forward towards the tree top, when immediately I saw a gun poked out from amongst the leaves. It being fired at once, my brother was shot right through the body with a couple of bullets. He instantly turned and dashed back into the woods and fell dead about 100 yeards off.

"The Indians, finding themselves discovered, rose all together, yelling like demons, and charged upon our party. Hickerson took his stand unwisely right in the road

instead of treeing, and his gun missing fire, he next attempted to use my gun, which he had in his hand. But while in the act of firing it, he was shot with six or seven bullets, and running a little distance, he also fell and expired. At this I jumped off the horse and, taking my little brother John, and my sister Prudence, I ran back and placed them behind the men, who, advancing, kept the Indians a few moments at bay.

"My mother was mounted upon a large, powerful horse, and he, scared quite ungovernable, dashed right along the entire line of the Indians, whilst she holding to his mane was carried about a mile distant to the fort.

"My father and Mr. Morgan, my brother-in-law, kept the Indians in check until the whites and negroes scattered into the woods. Morgan was then wounded by the Indians who, flanking around, shot him very dangerously through the body He, however, succeeded in escaping, my father keeping the savages back for some little time longer. Finally, after firing his heavy rifle, which I could mark distinctly from the report made, so different from that made by the Indian's guns, he turned and ran about forty yards, when he fell, pierced by thirteen bullets.

"The Indians scalped him and hastily fled, not stopping to take anything but his rifle and shot pouch. . . . Meanwhile I had directed my little brother and sister to run back to the house. I awaited behind a tree upon the hill the result of the fight. When I heard my father fire and the Indians raise the yell, thereupon I started for the fort."

A Noble Character. When William Hall was eighteen he acted as a spy. A large party of 260 Indians attacked some men in a field outside the fort where he was. William Hall and another dashed out fearlessly to assist them. A volley from the Indians whistled about their heads. Reserving their fire the two men jumped the fence and charged the Indians, whose guns were now empty, and drove them back. Soon a third party of Indians struck at them from the side. Hall and his comrade decided that their only chance was in a bold charge. Two other men from the fort now joined them and they drove the Indians from the fence and held them back.

William Hall was without his hat and a bullet passed right through his hair, cutting it off close to the skin, doing but slight damage. The little party then gained the fort under heavy fire from the Indians. Such courage awed the Indians from further attacks.

"This repulse of 260 warriors well armed and flushed with victory by four men, exposed to fire constantly from the Indians, during the whole attack, is almost without a parallel. One of the brave men who participated in it, General William Hall, of Sumner County, still (1853) survives, venerated and esteemed by his countrymen for his gallantry, his patriotism and private worth. He has since occupied the highest station in the civil and military service of his state, and presents a proud specimen of the heroic age and of the early times of Tennessee."[1]

William Hall lived to become the seventh Governor of Tennessee, succeeding Governor Sam Houston in 1829, being previously Speaker of the Senate. From 1797-1805 he had represented Sumner County in the General Assembly; and had served in the Senate from 1821-1829. He served as a Brigadier General in the War of 1812, and was with Andrew Jackson in every hard-fought battle, both against the Indians and the British. After serving as Governor he was later elected to the United States Congress. This was in 1831.

This notable tribute has been paid him: "After leaving Congress, he retired to his private estate called 'Green Gardens,' near Castilian Springs, until his death, which occurred October 7, 1856. *He was one of the purest men who has ever occupied the exalted position of Governor of Tennessee.*"[2]

Legacy Left by Daring Pioneers. This story is told and these details given that we of today may better realize the perils endured by those who dared to be pioneers. Our lives are so different now that we may never know what life in America was like in the days of our grandfathers. In

1. Ramsey, *Annals of Tennessee,* p. 602.
2. Moore, *Tennessee, The Volunteer State,* Vol. II, p. 139.

certain sections lawless men had to be subdued. Drouth destroyed the livelihood of many families; and they had to face despair and defeat. They and their loved ones thirsted for water and life-giving rain. As pioneers they bravely endured a sentence of hard labor for life. But they won out in the end. They gained a homeland for the great and mighty nation of America today. They bequeathed to us our land and our freedom, but above all, a glorious example of a courageous race who conquered the wilderness.

Small Opportunity for Record Keeping. Under conditions such as those described in this chapter, it is not surprising that records were not plentifully kept. Those were days of stirring action, from one day to another. Hands were more trained to the axe and the plow and the rifle, than to grasping the pen. If in your genealogical research you feel to blame these hardy men and women of the frontier for not preserving better accounts of their families for the future, and for the convenience of genealogists, just remember the rigors of their lives, and the day by day struggle for existence.

Fortunately some men, like Governor William Hall, took time to tell their story, that it might be preserved. Such circumstantial accounts, rare in the extreme, are more precious than rubies. They should be known and loved by all who have appreciation of past generations. They should be taught to children and children's children from one generation to another. Let us fittingly honor such noble men and women such as these, and preserve their memory and that of their forefathers and posterity in a suitable family history for the future.

In gathering the records of the descendants of my Brandon ancestors, I found that one of them had married Governor William Hall. His wife was Mary Brandon Alexander, the daughter of William Alexander and Mary Brandon. So actually his wife and children and posterity were to be included in the Brandon genealogy I was compiling, along with him and his stirring biography. This has been done, and his genealogy is now preserved as it should be.

"Mrs. Hall (his mother), before her marriage, was Miss Thankful Doak, a native of North Carolina. Their son, William, afterwards Governor, married Miss Mary B. Alexander; they had children — Richard A. William H., Thankful J., Martha, Mary, Alexander and John A., all of whom left Sumner County except Richard and William. Richard left no children. William married Catherine Barry, who left one son. His second wife was Miss S. W. McDaniel, grandniece of General James Winchester. By this marriage he had one son, Judge William H. Hall, now (1909) cashier of the First National Bank of Gallatin, and three daughters." (Jay Guy Cisco: *Historic Sumner County, Tennessee,* 1909, p. 262.)

This was the beginning point of the record of his descendants.

Caliber and Stamina of the First Settlers. The above author pays this tribute to the pioneers of Sumner County:

"The curtain of history rises on Sumner county in the year 1779, when a settlement of a dozen families was formed near Bledsoe's Lick. 'Isolated in the heart of the wilderness, their only protection from marauding Indians was their undaunted courage and the stockade enclosures around their cabins.'

"The winter of 1779-80 brought many new settlers. The tide had set in, and it continued to flow, despite the many dangers and hardships which the people had to encounter. The first settlers came chiefly from the Watauga, North Carolina and from Virginia, though a few came from Pennsylvania and South Carolina. . . .

"The men who settled Sumner county were for the most part of obscure birth and accustomed to poverty. A few of them were men of wealth, and a small percent of them were of aristocratic descent. Some brought with them to their new homes money and slaves. They came to found in the wilderness new homes and greater estates and to find better opportunites for their children. Some of the higher social class who had lost their fortunes in the older settlements came to begin life anew. Some were sons of the older families, young men, who came, purchased large estates,

married and founded families. But the greater number were poor men who saw no opportunity in the older settlements. It was these men who 'animated by the twin spirit of chivalry and adventure united,' contended with the Indians and laid the foundation of Tennessee. . . .

" 'The over-mountain settlers were not fugitives from justice, nor needy adventurers seeking in the untrodden West a scanty subsistence, which had been denied them in the Eastern settlements. And they were not merely Virginians — they were the culled wheat of the Old Dominion, with all those grand qualities which made the name of "Virginia" a badge of honor throughout the colonies. Many of them were cultivated men of large property, and, though the larger number were poor in this world's goods, they all possessed those more stable riches which consist of stout arms and brave hearts, unblemished integrity and sterling worth. They were so generally educated that in 1776 only two in about two hundred were found unable to write their names in good, legible English. . . .

"The soil of Sumner county is sacred because mingled with it is the dust of heroes and heroines, of martyrs in the cause of civilization; men who fought in the battles of the Revolution; men who wrested this beautiful land from the savage red men and paved the way for empire; men who saw their fathers and mothers, their brothers and sisters, their wives and children, their friends and companions fall before the rifles of Indian foes, saw the scalps torn from their heads and their mangled bodies left as food for beasts and birds of prey. And the women and children were no less heroic than the men, and, if possible, they suffered more. . . . Many of the men and women who toiled and struggled and conquered the wilderness now sleep in unmarked graves, which time and the plow have obliterated, and in many instances the sacred spot has been forgotten." (*Ibid.*, pp. 15-16, 25-26.)

> No people on earth, in similar circumstances, ever acted more nobly or more bravely than they did. No people of any country or age made greater sacrifices for the benefit of their posterity than those which were made by the first settlers of our western regions. (Doddridge)

Chapter 9 •

NOTABLE MEMBERS OF THE FAMILY

Those of limited experience in genealogical research can scarcely realize the degree of kinship among different families of our acquaintance and neighborhood. Nor are they aware that our families bear lineal relationship to families throughout the world, whatever their rank or station. Among these numerous kindred are bound to be some notable men and women classed by history as among the world's great. Since their biographies and often their genealogies are known, we may utilize these to throw light upon our own lineage.

For example, let us begin with a character beloved throughout the world, but far removed from us in time and place — the poet and novelist, Sir Walter Scott. He had all the instincts of a true genealogist, and did much to turn the hearts of the children to their fathers. He wrote a brief autobiography, printed a genealogy on one of his maternal lines, collected portraits at Abbotsford of many of his nearer ancestors, searched old documents and records for facts, preserved family coats-of-arms, and above all he made live again for us in poem and captivating story his very own progenitors. The successful modern genealogist may well emulate his methods.

In order to speak with assurance we have traced his pedigree, utilizing the best and most authentic sources today available, to include the names of over 700 of his direct ancestors, and have tabulated them on 75 pedigree charts. A study of these lineages shows that in only a very few generations he is connected with families of highest rank among the Scottish nobility, and also with most of the noble and royal lines in the various countries of Europe—France, Germany, Spain, Holland, Hungary, Russia, Constantinople, Italy, Poland and the countries of Scandinavia. In fact, his is simply a typical pedigree.

JAMES IV of Scotland

Katherine Stewart	Margaret Stewart	Janet Stewart	James V of Scotland
Margaret Douglas	Agnes Drummond	John Fleming	Mary, Queen of Scots
Claud Hamilton	Margaret Montgomerie	John Fleming	James VI of Scotland
Margaret Hamilton	Alexander Seton	John Fleming	Charles I of England
Margaret Douglas	Hugh Montgomerie	Alexander Fleming	Charles II of England
Margaret Alexander	Alexander Montgomerie	John Fleming	Charlotte Fitzroy
Anne Sinclair	Alexander Montgomerie	Charles Fleming	Charlotte Lee
Jean Swinton	Catherine Montgomerie	Judith Fleming	Charles Calvert
Anne Rutherford	Alexander Stewart	Mary Isham Randolph	Benedict Calvert
SIR WALTER SCOTT	John Stewart	Mary Keith	Eleanor Calvert
Poet and novelist	George Stewart	JOHN MARSHALL, Chief Justice	

John Winston Spencer Churchill
(Lord) Randolph Churchill
SIR WINSTON SPENCER CHURCHILL,
Prime Minister

George Washington Parke Custis
Mary Anne Randolph Custis
md.
GENERAL ROBERT E. LEE
of the Confederacy

The accompanying chart will show his descent from King James IV of Scotland, who fell at disastrous Flodden Field, 9 September 1513. Sir Walter Scott was his 8th great-grandson. Other descendants of this same monarch are Sir Winston Churchill, former Prime Minister of Great Britain, the wife and mother of the children of General Robert E. Lee, and (probably) the noted Chief Justice John Marshall.

Numerous Posterity of a Colonial Settler. A very enlightening exercise demonstrating some facts of kinship is to commence with an early colonial settler and trace down all his descendants possible on every line, regardless of the surnames they bore. Among the thousands whose names and records will be gathered as the project proceeds, there are some who will stand head and shoulders above the rest, so far as worldly fame is concerned. History has written their names in large and bold type. The record will also clearly prove that each of these noted members of the family has numerous relatives who never attained to particular distinction. Yet in their own more limited and less-known field they may have risen to the noblest heights, despite their more humble station. But surely where more things are known about a person the more interesting he becomes to us and everyone else.

From Thomas Richards, a prominent settler of New England, born in Pitminster, Somerset, England, a number of leading men are descended: General Douglas MacArthur, Franklin D. Roosevelt, President of the United States, and from here in Utah Alonzo A. Hinckley and Gordon B. Hinckley, Joseph F. Merrill and Samuel O. Bennion.

Robert White and Bridget Allgar of Messing, Essex County, England, well-to-do folks, were married 24 June 1585, at Shalford, Essex; and three of their daughters came to New England with their husbands. Mary White married Joseph Loomis; and there is a large printed genealogy of their posterity. Among them are Joseph Smith, Jr., President Lorenzo Snow and Elder Joseph F. Merrill. Her sister, Anna White, married John Porter; and there is a

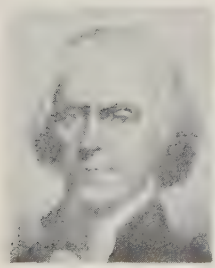
two-volume published record of their offspring. The third daughter of Robert and Bridget, Elizabeth White, married William Goodwin; her progeny is of record in the Goodwin genealogy. With so much published material it is quite possible other descendants of national note derived from them. Anna White and John Porter can claim at least two Presidents of the United States as their lineal representatives: Ulysses S. Grant and Grover Cleveland.

A Mother of Statesmen. On page 86 of the published volume, *The Ishams in England and America,* appears the portrait of an attractive young lady. She is described as "Mary Isham, wife of Colonel William Randolph, 1680." A typical Virginia lady, she is noted not so much for her career in public as for her children and posterity. It is doubtful if in all history could be found one who numbers within a few generations more notable men of affairs and public benefactors.

Her life story is but brief. She was the daughter of Virginia colonists, Henry Isham and Katherine Banks, and of the fifteenth generation in lineal descent from a certain Henry de Isham, living at the time of Domesday in 1086 A.D. Hence her descendants may trace back to the elder branch of one of the oldest of Northhamptonshire families. (See *Northhamptonshire Families,* pp. 143-147.)

William Randolph and Mary Isham were the parents of twelve children. Some of them died in infancy; seven left descendants distinguished as generals and statesmen. A brief sketch of several will be given.

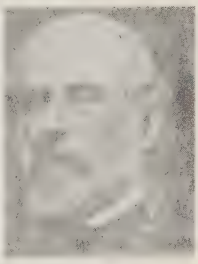
Beverley Randolph, son of Col. Peter Randolph (surveyor of customs and long a member of the Virginia House of Burgesses) and Lucy Bolling, was an ardent patriot and member of the General Assembly during the Revolutionary War; and President of the Executive Council of Virginia in 1787. In 1788 he succeeded his relative, Edmund Randolph, as Governor of Virginia. In turn he was followed as Governor by General Henry Lee, another descendant of Mary Isham.



President
THOMAS JEFFERSON

Chief Justice
JOHN MARSHALL

General
HENRY LEE



General
ROBERT E. LEE

MARY ISHAM AND HER DESCENDANTS

John Marshall, son of Col. Thomas Marshall and Mary Isham Keith, was the eldest of fifteen children. He fought as a Captain in the Revolutionary War; and favored the adoption of the Federal Constitution. He served as a member of Congress, Secretary of State under President John Adams, and as an illustrious Chief Justice of the United States from 1801 to 1835. By his decisions in the Supreme Court he had great influence in the formative stage of our government. It is declared he had almost supernatural powers of distinguishing at a glance the very point on which the controversy depended.

Thomas Mann Randolph, eldest son of Thomas Mann Randolph and Anne Cary, married Martha Jefferson, daughter of President Thomas Jefferson, with whom he afterwards made his home at "Monticello" and in the White House. He served in the U.S. Senate, 1793-1794; in the U.S. House of Representatives, 1803-1807; was Governor of Virginia, 1819-1822; and died at "Monticello" 20 June 1828.

His son, Thomas Jefferson Randolph, was a man of great stature; served frequently in the Virginia House of Delegates, and edited the papers of his grandfather, Thomas Jefferson. Another son, George Wythe Randolph, was Secretary of War for the Confederate States.

President Thomas Jefferson, son of Peter Jefferson and Jane Randolph, daughter of Isham Randolph, was a great-grandson of Mary Isham. He was Governor of Virginia, 1779-1781, author of the Declaration of Independence and President of the United States. His biography and his greatness is well known.

James Pleasants, Jr., was the son of James Pleasants and Anne Randolph, daughter of Isham Randolph. He was Governor of Virginia, 1822-1825, and a United States Senator. He left a distinguished son, John Hampden Pleasants.

Richard Bland, Jr., son of Richard Bland and Elizabeth Randolph, was pronounced by Jefferson "the most learned and logical man of those who took prominent part in public

affairs, profound in constitutional lore." He opposed the Stamp Act with great zeal, and was a valiant champion of American rights in the Continental Congress. He was equally famous as the "Virginia Antiquary," and from his profound knowledge of history proved himself "a patriarchal exemplar of good citizenship and instructor in the rights of freemen. The whole of Virginia could offer no more satisfactory ancestors, from the standpoint of public spirit and of scholarship, than the Blands."

General Henry Lee (Light Horse Harry), grandnephew of the last-named, was the son of Henry Lee and Lucy Grymes, and grandson of Henry Lee and Mary Bland, and the 2nd great-grandson of Mary Isham. He was Governor of Virginia, 1792-1795; a Major-General in 1794; member of Congress, 1799-1801; and above all personal attainments he was the father of General Robert E. Lee, and the grandfather of two Major-Generals — Fitzhugh Lee and William Henry Fitzhugh Lee.

Edmund Randolph (1753-1813), was the son of John Randolph, the last attorney general for Virginia under the royal government. He remained in Virginia when his father fled to England in 1775; and Washington made him a member of his own family and his aide-de-camp. His services included the offices of attorney general of Virginia, member of the Continental Congress, 1779-1782, Governor of Virginia, 1786-1788; and he was the leader of the Virginia delegation to the Convention that framed the Constitution. Washington made him his first Attorney General of the National Government, 1789-1794. He then succeeded Thomas Jefferson as Secretary of State, 1794-1795. His son Peyton was acting Governor of Virginia, 1811-1812, and an eminent lawyer.

Peyton Randolph, uncle of Gov. Edmund Randolph, just named, was one of the leading spirits of the Revolution, and an outstanding opponent of the Stamp Act. He was a member of the first Continental Congress and was unanimously chosen its President. In 1775 he was the presiding officer of the second Virginia convention. He was a close

friend of Washington, and Jefferson when a youth took him for a model to pattern after. He married Elizabeth Harrison, sister of Benjamin Harrison, a signer of the Declaration of Independence.

Thomas Nelson, a member of the family by marriage, married Lucy Grymes, daughter of Mary Randolph, who was a granddaughter of Mary Isham. He succeeded Jefferson as Governor of Virginia in 1781. He was a member of the Continental Congress, 1775-1779; and a signer of the Declaration of Independence. He commanded the Virginia militia at Yorktown, and ordered the artillery to fire upon his own house as it sheltered British officers. He raised and equipped troops at his own expense and expended his entire fortune for his country.

John Randolph of Roanoke, (1773-1833), son of John Randolph and Frances Bland, and grandson of Richard Randolph and Jane Bolling, was a distinguished American statesman and orator. He entered Congress in 1799 and continued there until 1824, when he was elected to the Senate. He was a man of eccentric ideas with a gift for originality; and he consistently opposed every public wrong. At his death he freed 318 slaves and left them property to make a new start in life.

Archibald Cary was grandson-in-law of Mary Isham, and was born 24 Jan. 1721. He opposed the Stamp Act; and was a member of the Continental Congress. He was the first speaker of the Senate in 1776. He married Mary Randolph, daughter of Richard Randolph of Curles. His daughter Anne Cary married Thomas Mann Randolph, and was the mother of the Governor of Virginia by the same name.

William Fitzhugh, son of Henry Fitzhugh and Lucy Carter, was a member of the Virginia House of Burgesses and of the Continental Congress from 1779 to 1780. He married Ann, daughter of Peter Randolph (grandson of Mary Isham). Their daughter married the adopted son of Washington; their granddaughter was the wife of General Robert E. Lee.

Thus it will be seen that it is not an over-statement by that author who declared: "Among Mary Isham's descendants are included some of the greatest names in the world's history, numbering those of John Marshall, Thomas Jefferson, and Robert E. Lee."

Going Back One Generation. Now let us suppose that we carry our human experiment back just one generation further, to the mother of Mary Isham. She was Katherine Banks, who married first Joseph Royall, by whom she had a son, Captain Joseph Royall, born about 1646. After her first husband's death, Katherine Banks married Henry Isham, by whom she had three children: Henry Isham, *Mary Isham* and Anne Isham. In her will she mentions her son Joseph Royall and *other children.*

Now if her one daughter, Mary Isham, became the progenitor of six Governors of Virginia, and of the wife of another Governor, and of a signer of the Declaration of Independence, of one of our greatest Chief Justices, of two United States Senators, of a Secretary of State, an Attorney General, of the President of the Continental Congress, of an outstanding orator, and of a President of the United States, what a numerous multitude would descend from her mother, Katherine Banks, who had four children!

Katherine's son, Captain Joseph Royall, married Mary Eppes, and they had four children: Joseph, John, William and Henry. A printed genealogy has been compiled of their posterity, at least in part. The author traces the descendants of all of these sons except Henry Royall. His family is carried down for only one generation. In Henry's will he names his sons Joseph, William and John.

These three sons disappear from Virginia records, but reappear in North Carolina. Joseph Royall, born in Virginia in 1726, died while in Revolutionary service in North Carolina in 1778. He left a son John. Joseph's brothers, William and John, are located in deeds in Duplin County, North Carolina. In 1784 Sampson County was cut off from Duplin. After that they and their descendants appear often in deeds and wills and census records of Sampson County.

The spelling of the name varies. Sometimes it appears as Ryal, Ryall and Royal. Of this family was Noah Royal who has a numerous offspring in Sampson County and vicinity. Some of his descendants came to Utah. One of the present generation, Paul Royall, is a resident of Salt Lake City, and is widely known for his radio, civic and genealogical activities.

Posterity of a Western Pioneer. It would be ridiculous for a genealogist to specialize in securing records of the famous members of the family only. To him every person should be as essential to a perfect family genealogy as any other. Of course it is easier to find records of the notable ones, but after you have utilized that one advantage, then you set out to obtain all the fascinating facts about those who are not well known, but who may have lived noble lives now unknown. It is your obligation to search out these stories of worthy lives, and preserve them for posterity, so that in the future they may be known and appreciated.

Out of the multitude of descendants of a Mayflower pilgrim, a Revolutionary sire, a United Empire Loyalist, or a western pioneer, the result is largely the same; there are surely many among them whose lives can be known and whose records can be found available. Using the modern method of going to original and documentary sources, new and hitherto unrevealed facts may be uncovered and brought to light.

Suppose we look at the family of "Father" John Tanner. Born in Rhode Island, he moved to New York and prospered. Eventually he became the father of a large family of sons and daughters. Fairly complete records of his descendants have been kept to date, and a volume of their records has been published. They possibly total now between 5,000 and 10,000 who are the offspring of this John Tanner, born in 1778.

Other families of our community, such as the family of George Cannon, or of John Bennion, have very numerous representatives today. The commendable practice of forming family organizations of the descendants of a certain pioneer couple is becoming popular. The family organiza-

tion appoints a family historian and one or more family genealogists. These have the duty of first proving all the lineal connections, and then of securing the interesting, fascinating life facts about the pioneer forefather and his wife, then of the children in turn; eventually bringing the genealogical and historical record right down to the present.

When such a record has been made so complete and appealing, it is advisable to preserve it in permanent form, with records, photographs and every appropriate illustration, as well as the citation or quotation of sources which justify the conclusions set forth. This may be done by regular printing; or the manuscript may now be inexpensively microfilmed, with positive copies being placed in key libraries. Other copies may be distributed among family members. Reading machines for using microfilms are now quite plentiful. For those who do not have access to them, it is possible now to print from the film enlarged copies of the pages at about 5c per page. But the first big step is to compile the family record acceptably.

What You May Contribute to Posterity. We need now more authors of accurate genealogies — authentic, documented, well illustrated and attractive. By doing your full part in this, you can make a priceless gift to the families of the future. You can actually aid in making all members notable persons.

Chapter 10 •

BARRIERS OVERCOME

Discouraging failures may often disappoint the ardent genealogist. A possible solution may hold out alluring prospects, only to prove a will-o'-the-wisp, deceitfully luring on to a vain pursuit, that is exposed upon careful investigation. Again, a pleasing family connection may be found in a published genealogy, that is proved to be entirely wrong when put to the test of accuracy. Other baffling problems may be encountered which are like a high stone wall, with apparently not a single clue to indicate an opening in the massive obstruction or how it may be scaled.

Disappointmentts should never lead to despair. On every hand are the examples of researchers who have met up with so-called impossible genealogical barriers, but who later, by intensive study of the case and diligent, unrelenting effort in searching out all available facts, have found the solution they sincerely desired. They were able to penetrate the impassable limitation. Why should not you do the same?

The Pioneer Spirit in Research. If the dauntless pioneers had given up weakly at the first "insuperable" barrier which blocked their pathway, there would have been no United States of America today. With indomitable spirit they overcame and triumphed over every barrier which barred their way. The obstructions were many and the hindrances discouraging. But instead of these remaining signposts of defeat they became symbols of glorious victory.

Can we not apply that dauntless pioneer spirit to the search for our ancestors?

Typical Barriers in the Genealogical Quest. Families living in Canada, like the Merkleys, the Shavers, the Casselmans and the Dillabaughs may have the tradition of an origin in the States, but beyond that everything for the

earlier generations is blurred and uncertain. The boundary line is the barrier.

Even for those families there who have been so fortunate as to find their American connection and follow it, they come eventually to a dead standstill when they reach the first of their lineage to set foot in the New World. Nothing is known of his home or kindred ties across the great deep. The ocean is the inscrutable barrier.

For other Canadian families the spelling of their surname has altered so radically that they know not what name to search for in their examination of earlier records. The Van Ormans of Ontario originated south of the border, but the problem is what was the original form of that surname. The unknown surname is the barrier.

Intermarriages Among the Loyalists. It is quite understandable that while living as neighbors in the small pioneer communities, families of the Loyalists would frequently intermarry. "The Merkley Family Tree," compiled by Dr. Stanley A. Merkley, of Winchester, Ontario, Canada, has been microfilmed for our Genealogical Library in Salt Lake City (F FH 403). It reveals many intermarriages between the Merkleys and the Casselmans of Williamsburg, Ontario, and vicinity, as witness these entries:

10	Jacob Merkley	md.	Elizabeth Casselman
17	Michael Merkley	md.	C. Casselman
18	Emma C. Merkley	md.	Adam Casselman
24	Sally Merkley	md.	G. Casselman
27	Catherine Merkley	md.	M. Casselman
28	Mary Markley	md.	Dan Casselman
32	Mary Merkley	md.	H. J. Casselman

So entwined are these family twigs on the tree that the genealogist must of necessity work out a complete record of both lineages in order to identify properly those who intermarried.

The New York origin of the Merkleys is indicated in Chapter 3 of this text, in connection with the finding of the genealogy of John Shaver. Can a similar procedure enlighten us as to the American home of the Casselmans?

Effect of Systematic and Thorough Searching. A searching examination of the records of the loyalists revealed a printed copy of the "Old United Empire Loyalist List," preserved in the Crown Lands Department at Toronto. This contained the names of nine Casslemans, eight of whom had served as soldiers or drummers in the King's Royal Regiment of New York.

Name *Residence* *Descendants*

Cassleman, Conradt, E. District, Williamsburgh. Soldier in R. Regt. N. York — 300 Muster Roll (single) P. L. 2d, 1786. Son of Suffrenus.

Cassleman, Henry, do. Williamsburgh. Drummer R.R.N.Y.M. Roll — single, P. L. 2d, 1786.

Cassleman, John, H District, M.C. Soldier B. R. — P.O.C. 18th Novr., 1797, Niagara Stamped Book — a wife and one child — P. L. N. 1786.

Cassleman, Richard, Williamsburgh. R.R.N.Y. Muster Roll. A. Had wife and child. P.L. 2nd, 1786.

Cassleman, Suffrenus, E. District, Matilda. R.R.N.Y. Muster Roll—one child—P.L. 2nd, 1786.

Cassleman, Suffrenus Jr., do. Son of Suffrenus, Senr., 200.

Cassleman, Thomas, do. Williamsburgh. Drummer R.R.N.Y., Muster Roll. Single — P. L. 2d, 1786.

Cassleman, Warner (Verner), Williamsburgh. R. R. N. Y. Muster Roll — a wife and two children. P. L. 2nd, 1786.

Cassleman, William. See order-in-Council 17th March, 1807. Soldier R.R.N.Y.

(From *The Centennial of the Settlement of Upper Canada by the United Empire Loyalists,* 1784-1884, Toronto, 1885, p. 153.)

(Key to abbreviations: R.R.N.Y. — Royal Regiment of New York. P. L. 2nd, 1786 — Provision List, Eastern District. B.R.—Butler's Rangers. P.O.C.—petition Order-in-Council) P.L.N—Provision List, Niagara.)

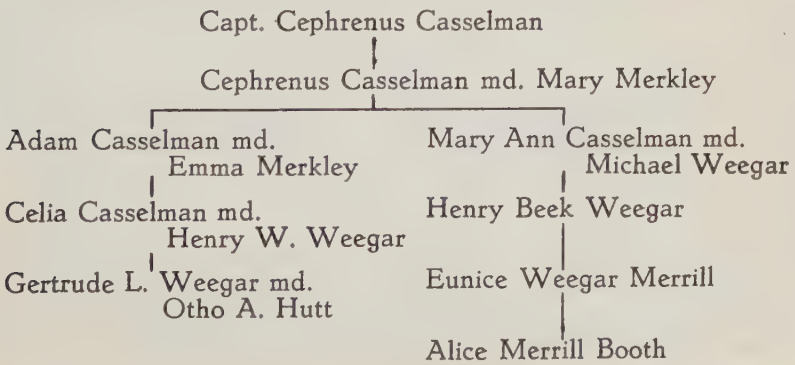
Conrad and Suffrenus, Jr. are stated to be sons of Suffrenus, Senr., who was a soldier in the King's Royal Regiment of New York. His name appears in the records also as "Cerferenus," "Sefernes" and "Severinus." This Captain Suffrenus or Cephrenus Casselman was noted for his raiding exploits in the War, as a loyalist leader.

It was interesting to learn, in a letter from Mrs. Alice M. Booth, of Honeyville, Utah, dated June 26, 1955, that she and her mother, Mrs. Eunice Weegar Merrill, 8820 West 2700 South, Magna, Utah, were Casselman descendants. Mrs. Merrill was the daughter of Henry Beek Weegar, born 4 January 1857, at Williamsburg, Ontario, Canada, who was the son of Michael Weegar and Mary Ann Casselman. In her letter Mrs. Booth said, "It seems I must get a lead somewhere. Is there any family research work being done on this family? If so can you give me any addresses I might use to get any information?"

Help from a Cousin. Later Mrs. Booth wrote to a cousin in Canada, Mrs. O. A. Hutt, whose maiden name was Gertrude L. Weegar, and who was also a Casselman descendant. She reported the result of her correspondence thus:

> Mrs. O. A. Hutt sent me a friendly letter. I had sent her some family sheets asking her, if it were possible, would she finish filling them out.
>
> She is a school teacher and plans on taking trips this summer at vacation time to hunt the dates, etc., needed.
>
> Believe me, I was happy to contact her. This is the first Casselman information I have had.

The information from Mrs. Gertrude L. Weegar Hutt (Mrs. Otho A.), 62 Scott St., Kingston, Ontario, Canada, included four family groups, comprising four generations back from herself on her father's sheet. This proved the relationship of the two cousins to be as shown on this chart:



No further evidence is needed to emphasize the fact of frequent intermarriages between the Casselmans and Merkleys than to list the children of Cephrenus Casselman and Mary Merkley. Their daughter Mary Ann Casselman was born 15 May 1831, at Williamsburg; and died 10 April 1871. Her brothers and sisters were as follows:

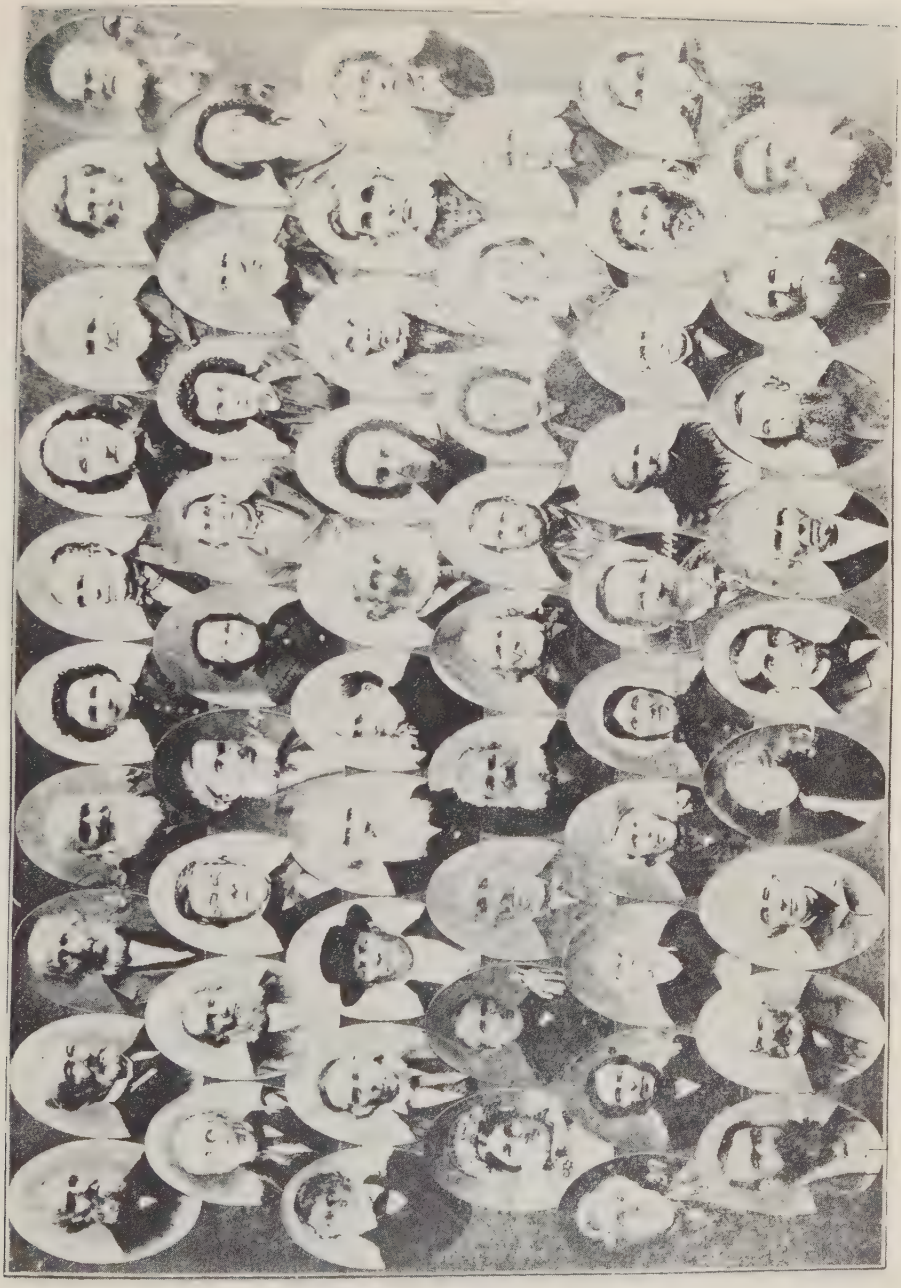
Adam Casselman	md.	Emma Merkley
William Casselman	md.	Mary Casselman
Elizabeth Casselman	md.	Bill Merkley
Eva Casselman	md.	William Casselman
Caroline Casselman	md.	Michael Moore
Mary Ann Casselman	md.	Michael Weegar
Sally Casselman	md.	Michael O'Shaugnessy
Nancy Casselman	md.	Stata

Mrs. Hutt gave the parents of Cephrenus Casselman (husband of Mary Merkley) as Captain Cephrenus Casselman and Sally Heckney. She listed them with these children:

Cephrenus Casselman	md.	Mary Merkley
Sally Casselman	md.	Cook
Henry Casselman		
Mary Casselman	md.	Van Doren
Eva Casselman		

Her record of the Casselman family ended at this generation. The barrier of the boundary line now took effect. Both she and Mrs. Booth needed help in extending the line.

Family Connections from Land Grants. According to the regulations in Canada each loyalist soldier was entitled to a grant of 200 acres of land. Sons of loyalists, on coming to full age, or daughters of loyalists when of age or on their marriage, were each entitled to 200 acres. Consequently, the records of these official grants to the sons and daughters give good proof of relationships. In the volumes entitled *Data On the United Empire Loyalists* (Ont. 14), collected by W. D. Reid, while on the staff of the Archives Department, there is a record of the families of the nine Casselmans who appeared on the U. E. Loyalist Roll, as given above. Children shown for Sufrenus (or Suffrenius) Casselman of Williamsburg follows (O. C. means Order-in-Council, or the date the petition was granted):



EARLY SETTLERS OF WILLIAMSBURG, ONTARIO, CANADA

s. Martin S. of Williamsburg ..... O. C. 24 Nov. 1842
s. Conrad of Williamsburg ..... O. C. 24 Nov. 1842
s. William of Williamsburg ..... O. C. 24 Nov. 1842
s. Peter of Williamsburg ..... O. C. 24 Nov. 1832
d. Sally md. George Cook of Williamsburg .. O. C. 24 Nov. 1832
d. Mary md. George Doran of Matilda ..... O. C. 27 Oct. 1832
d. Charity md. Henry Casselman of Williamsburg ..... O. C. 25 Feb. 1806
d. Margaret md. John Hickey of Williamsburg ..... O. C. 25 Feb. 1806
d. Hannah md. Philip Stata of Williamsburg ..... O. C. 19 Apr. 1816
s. Suffrenus of Williamsburg ..... O. C. 18 Mar. 1818
d. Elizabeth md. Jacob J. Merkley of Williamsburg ..... O. C. 28 Oct. 1835
s. Henry S. of Matilda ..... O. C. 18 Feb. 1836
s. William of Matilda ..... O. C. 27 Nov. 1834
(pp. 94, 99, 100)

Warner Casselman of Williamsburg is given with two children; and also the family of William Casselman.

It was noted that the children given in these land grants to Suffrenus Casselman, and those listed as children of Captain Cephrenus Casselman in the record sent by Mrs. Hutt, have a striking similarity of names and spouses. In both there are sons Suffrenus (or Cephrenus) and Henry; in both is a daughter *Sally* who married a *Cook*, and a daughter Mary who married *George Doren* or *Van Doren*. The spelling of the given names, Cephrenus and Suffrenus, sounding almost identical, in all probability relate to the same person. An unusual name is more likely to be found spelled differently than a more common name.

Planning for Success. By studying the example of those genealogists who have triumphed over obstacles, we notice how invariably they plan with care every step of their research in a logical manner so as to insure success. Such wise planning should help in this research case of the Casselmans. We know from the records already cited that they were loyalist soldiers and received grants of land from the Crown. They were also permitted to make application for reimbursement for losses they had sustained in being

driven from their homes and deprived of their possessions after the signing of peace. It would be well to follow this clue and investigate carefully the printed record of such claims.

In the *Second Report of the Bureau of Archives for the Province of Ontario*, 1904, is this enlightening application:

> Montreal, 27 Feb. 1788. Evidence of the Claim of Warner Casselman, late of Tryon County, N. York.
>
> Says he was a soldier in the 1st Batal. of the K. Regt. of New York in 1783. He was born in Stoney Arabia and lived there when the war began. He came to Canada in 1777. Says that he never joined the Americans. He enlisted at Oswego in Sir John Johnson's Regt. and served the remainder of the War.
>
> He resides in the 4th Township of N. Johnstown. He had purchased 100 acres near Conojohay 2 years before the War. He had paid 10 pounds Cury. He was to have paid 60 pounds.
>
> He built a House and Stable and had cleared 8 or 9 acres. He left a Horse and 2 Cows and 2 Heifers behind him, 4 Sheep and some articles of Furniture.
>
> Wits. William Casselman sworn. Says he is Br. to Claimt. Remembers the farm he purchased near Conojohay. He had cleared 7 acres and had paid 10 pounds Cury. He lost 2 Horses, 2 Cows, 2 Heifers, a few Sheep and Hogs. (p. 454)

This gives the sought-for place location. Stoney Arabia in Tryon County is readily identified as Stone Arabia in the present Montgomery County, New York, near the present town of Palatine. Canajoharie is near it, in the same county. Werner and William Casselman were brothers.

Knowing the Sources Available. In our Library are microfilm copies of the Lutheran Church Records and also of the Dutch Reformed Church Records of Stone Arabia. These were next consulted, since Warner Casselman said he was born in Stone Arabia. Here we find Severinus Casselman and his wife Anna Maria had a son Conrad born 18 May 1769; and a son Martinus (later written Martin S.) born 25 September 1771. (Dutch Reformed Records, p. 18; Lutheran Records, pp. 27, 39.)

The earlier generation of the Casselmans is listed in the "Congregational Register of Stone Arabia and Cani-

schohare" kept by the Rev. Peter Nicholas Sommer. There were only two families—that of Ludwig and Margaretha Casselmann with nine children and that of Johann Wilhelm Casselmann and his wife Anna Margretha and three of their children. (*Book of Names,* p. 60.) At the baptism of their daughter Lisabett the mother's name is given as Margreta *SalsMan,* with Henrich Salsman and lisabet deile-Bach as sponsors. (Stone Arabia Dutch Reformed Church Record, p. 4.)

Wilhelm (William), Jr., Severinus and Werner Casselman, who went to Canada, prove to be brothers, and children of Johann Wilhelm Casselman and Anna Margretha Salsman.

War and the Separation of Families. It has been said that perhaps in no other section of the northern American colonies were there so many loyalists and so influential as in the Mohawk Valley. The family of the well known Sir William Johnson had long held sway there, and their attitude at the outbreak of hostilities was one of loyalty to the British crown. Sir John Johnson, son of Sir William who by then had died, gathered up his loyalist retainers and marched through the vast northern forest into Canada. They were in danger of starvation during the nineteen days of threading their way through the wilderness. Arrived at Montreal, he organized from his Tory followers two battalions for service with the English.

Following the signing of peace, "late in the autumn of 1783, the soldiers were joined by their wives and little ones, who had wandered the weary way on foot, to Whitehall, through swamps and forest, — beset with difficulties, dangers, and privations innumerable. The soldiers met them there with boats, and conveyed them the rest of their journey by water, through Lake Champlain. Imagination fails us when we attempt to form an idea of the emotions that filled their hearts, as families, that had formerly lived happily together, surrounded with peace and plenty, and had been separated by the rude hand of war, now met each other's embrace, in circumstances of abject poverty. A boisterous passage was before them, in open boats, exposed

LOYALISTS CROSSING INTO CANADA

to the rigors of the season — a dreary prospect of the coming winter, to be spent in pent up barracks, and a certainty should they be spared, of undergoing a lifetime of such hardships, toil and privation, as are inseparable from the settlement of a new country.

"As soon as the journey was accomplished, the soldiers and their families were embarked in boats, sent down to Richelieu, to Sorel, thence to Montreal, and on to Cornwall, by the laborious and tedious route of the St. Lawrence." (Wm. Canniff, *History of the Settlement of Upper Canada,* pp. 62-63.)

Using All the Sources. As we approach the earlier years the record sources still in existence become more meager. We must be sure to use all that are available, and each one to full advantage. Since our problem is to trace the parentage of Johann Wilhelm Casselman and his first wife, Anna Margretha Salsman, we avail ourselves of a

knowledge of the early settlers of Stone Arabia. They were Palatine emigrants from Germany who settled first in East Camp and West Camp on the Hudson River in 1710, later in Schoharie Valley, and then moved on to take up land in the Mohawk Valley.

On the 19th of October, 1723, the Stone Arabia Patentees granted to twenty seven Palatines, who with their families numbered one hundred and twenty seven persons, 12,700 acres, divided into 28 equal parts. Among the patentees was Mardan Dillinbeck, who was given lots 10 and 19; and Hans Deterick Casselman, who received lots 23 and 39. (*History of Montgomery and Fulton Counties, New York*, p. 35.) On 2 June 1729 Dietrich Casselman was one of the purchasers of land for the church at Stone Arabia. (*History of Montgomery Co., N.Y.*, p. 155.)

The Pastor of the Palatines, Rev. Joshua Kocherthal, kept an invaluable record of christenings and marriages. In it are important entries about the Casselmans.

> In the year 1710 I baptized the following on board the ship MIDFORT:
>
> April 12th: Elisabetha, child of Justus Henrich and Maria Margretha SCHAEFER; sponsors: Johann Leonard LUED and Anna Elisabetha CASSELMANN. (p. 16)
>
> In the year 1711:
>
> July 21st: Wilhelm, born July 19th, child of Johann Dietrich and Anna CASTELMANN; sponsor: Philip MUELLER, the sexton. (p. 19)

This is the Johann Wilhelm who later married, first, Anna Margretha Salsman, and, second, Anna Margretha Emig.

> Dec. 2d: Dietrich CASTELMANN was sponsor to a christening, (p. 21)
>
> In the year 1713:
>
> Febr. 24th: (Married) Joerg Martin DILLENBACH, widower, and Anna Elisabetha CASTELMANN, daughter of Johann Dietrich CASTELMANN. (p. 44)
>
> At the communion service held February 7, 1714, at Schoharie: Johann Ludwig CASTELMANN. (p. 40)
>
> (From *The Book of Names*, by Lou D. MacWethy.)

The next items relate to the first wife of Johann Wilhelm Casselmann:

April 29, 1717, at Rheinbeck:

Amalia, wife of Georg Saltzmann, whose parents were Dutch Reformed, was a communicant. (p. 40)

In the year 1718:

Febr. 6th: Georg SALTZMANN, widower, of Stollberg, in the Upper Lausitz, electorate of Saxony, and Anna Margretha KAPUTZGI, daughter of the late Johann Jacob KAPUTZGI, formerly a citizen of Erbelheim on the Rhine, duchy of Darmstadt (were married). (p. 46)

In the year 1719:

Febr. 2d: Anna Margretha, born Nov. 3d, child of Georg and Anna Margretha SALTMANN; sponsors: Johann Fridrich ZIPPERLIN and Anna Margretha BACKUS. (Baptism) (p. 38)

Other entries reveal more about the family of Anna Margretha Kaputzgi. On April 3d 1715 Johann Jacob KAPUTZKI and his wife were sponsors (p. 29). On Aug. 5th 1716 Jacob KAPUTZGI and his wife Anna Magdalena were sponsors (p. 33). Veltin and Anna Margretha CAPUTZGIN were sponsors Oct. 21st 1714 (p. 27). In the year 1717, April 29th Anna Margretha CAPUTZGI was sponsor (p. 34). On October 14, 1716, at Rheinbeck, Anna Margretha KAPUTZGIN and Anna Dorothea KAPUTZGIN were admitted to communion (p 40).

From a study of the above we conclude that Mrs. Booth, through her ancestor, Captain Severinus Casselman, is descended from Johann Wilhelm Casselmann, born July 19th 1711, the son of Johann Dietrich Casselmann and his wife Anna. Another child of this couple, Anna Elizabetha Casselmann, married on Feb. 24 1713, Joerg Martin Dillenbach. The first wife of Johann Wilhelm Casselmann was Anna Margretha Saltzmann, born Nov. 3 1718, the daughter of Georg Saltzmann and his second wife, Anna Margretha Kaputzgi. She in turn was the daughter of Johann Jacob Kaputzgi and, presumably, his wife Anna Magdalena. Best of all, the home place in Germany of Georg Saltzmann and that of Johann Jacob Kaputzgi is given.

Chapter 11 •

"BORN IN OHIO"

One of the baffling problems in genealogical research is to be confronted with the vague statement that an ancestor was born in a certain state, such as Ohio. This information, of course, is helpful, but certainly not helpful enough. The *location* is too large and too general to be really serviceable.

If it were "born in Connecticut" there is the consolidated index to vital records of the whole state which may be consulted to find the town or township of the person's birth. The same is true for Vermont and some other New England states. Not always are these vital records complete, and if the desired birth record is not found in them, then the genealogist is faced with the very same problem as though the ancestor was born in New York or Indiana or Michigan or Ohio.

Over and over again such problems of only the state identification are encountered. There is no one standard solution that can give in every case the desired precise place location. By examining some actual problems we may obtain suggestions from how other such difficulties have been solved.

Tracing Families from West to East. Here is a typical case. James Madison Adams was born in the year 1848, it is said, in Sacramento, California. He had a brother, Benjamin Franklin Adams, born 1843, place not stated, who died in 1871, Yola County, California. Their brother, William Armstrong Adams, was born in 1845, and died in 1872, no place for either event mentioned. The family must have moved to California from somewhere in the East, but *where?* That was the big problem.

They were the children of William Adams and Jane Brandon, both of whom were "born in Ohio." This was learned from consulting relatives. This was welcome infor-

mation, vastly limiting the number of places where the search would otherwise have to be made. But there are many, many places in Ohio, and 87 different counties. A systematic search among census records or county records of that number of counties would be an unending affair. Life is too short for such a laborious trial and error process.

Diligent inquiry elicited the further information that William Adams and his wife both died in Grafton, Yola County, California; he in 1878 and she in 1887. Cemeteries were searched but yielded no better place identification. The census of Yola County for 1870 stated only that each "was born in Ohio." That for 1880 did not mention William, for he had died two years earlier. For his widow Jane, it gave her birthplace as Ohio, and that of her parents as North Carolina. From letters, an old family Bible and her obituary in a local newspaper it was learned that she was the daughter of Benjamin Brandon and Mary Knox.

Still the county of her birth in Ohio was lacking. Next the surname approach was tried. Nothing published on the Brandon family which seemed to help was found by consulting the cards in the surname file in the Genealogical Library. So the Knox cards were next consulted. One reference seemed to offer possibilities, it being remembered that the census of 1880 stated the mother of Jane Brandon was born in North Carolina. The card was of a book entitled: *The Knox Family,* a Genealogical and Biographical Sketch of the Descendants of John Knox of Rowan County, North Carolina, and other Knoxes, by Hattie S. Goodman, Richmond, Virginia, 1905. The first name in the index was

	Page
ADAMS, William	185
Jane Brandon,	185

Help from a Family Genealogy. Undoubtedly this related to the family under consideration. The account on page 185 gave this record of their family, and at long last named two Ohio counties which could be searched.

6 Jane[4] Brandon, daughter of Benjamin Brandon and Mary Knox Brandon, born March 13, 1807, in Miami county, Ohio; married William Adams, November 13, 1828, who was

also a native of Ohio. He died in 1878, in Grafton, Yola county, Cal. She died in 1887, same place.

Issue.

1 Adaline[5] Adams, born 1832; married 1849; died 1851, in Dark county, Ohio.

2 Elizabeth[5] Adams, born 1834; was killed by the Indians, August 12, 1862, while crossing the plains with her parents.

3 George[5] W. Adams, born 1836; killed by the Indians on Snake River, August 12, 1862, on the way to California with his parents. He was wounded seven times in the two days' fight.

4 Caleb[5] Adams, born 1829; died 1849 in Dark county, Ohio.

5 Levi[5] Brandon Adams, born 1838; lives in Yola county, California.

6. Tho.[5] Joshua Adams, born 1840; died 1886, in Yola County, Cal.

7 Benjamin[5] Franklin Adams, born 1843; died 1871 in Yola County, Cal.

8 William[5] Armstrong Adams, born 1845; died 1872.

9 James[5] Madison Adams, born 1848 in Sacramento, Cal.

Considering the fact that the parents moved westward in 1862, surviving a desperate Indian attack in a two-day battle, one would question the fact of the youngest child, James Madison, being born in Sacramento, and that before the days of the gold rush in 1849.

Census records of Darke County, Ohio, could wisely be searched for the year 1850, since the first daughter, after marriage, died there in 1851; and the son Caleb died there, it was said, in 1849. If necessary the Miami Co., Ohio, records could be searched.

Aid from a Pension Record. The Knox Family has much more on Mary Knox, Benjamin Brandon and their many descendants.

1 Mary[3] Knox, daughter of John[2] Knox, Jr., and wife, Hannah Reid, was born in Rowan county, N. C.; have not the exact date of her birth, but it is thought to have been early in the 1760's. In 1790, February 6th, she married Benjamin Brandon, who was born in 1759. He was a soldier in the Revolution. . . . In 1804 she removed with her husband to Tennessee, and in 1808 from there to Miami county, Ohio, where she died about 1850, at an extreme age.

Mr. S. B. Judah, of Vincennes, Ind. (a grandson of Armstrong Brandon, her brother-in-law), says of her, "She was a most excellent woman, and one whose memory is still bright with us. She raised my grandfather Brandon, who was deprived of both his parents at an early age, and to him she was indeed a mother." (pp. 172-173)

On a later page are given these further particulars:

His (Benjamin's) father was James Brandon, whose will is found on record in Salisbury, N. C. We give a copy of this old will, as obtained from the clerk of the court, thinking it may be of special interest to the Brandon descendants. From this old will we have tried to locate the homestead of this family of Brandons, and conclude that the lands lay just north from Third Creek Church, and the mill property mentioned was that now known as Baker's Mill.

Dr. Rumple, in his valuable history of Rowan, makes mention of several Brandon families, but seems to have had very little knowledge of this family. Though he does mention Brandons on Fourth Creek, which may have been this family.

Benjamin Brandon's house was burned in the early days, and the Bible record lost, which makes it impossible to get all the dates.

Benjamin Brandon was a soldier in the Revolutionary War; enlisted when a youth of eighteen years. We give below a copy of the record obtained from the Bureau of Pensions at Washington. (Service listed for him covers the years 1777 to 1782, and these particulars):

Battles engaged in: Ramsour's Mills, Cowpens, Cowen's Ford, Torrence's Cross Roads. Residence of Soldier at enlistment: Rowan Co., N. C. Date of application for pension Oct. 29, 1832. Residence at date of application: Miami Co., Ohio. Age at date of application: Born April, 1759, in Rowan Co., N. C.

Remarks: In 1804, removed to Tennessee, in 1808 to Miami Co., Ohio; died May 5, 1837. His widow, Polly, to whom he was married Feb. 6, 1790, was also a pensioner. . . .

Mr. John Nicholson, of Polo, Ohio, says he had heard his grandmother, who was Polly Brandon, relate the circumstance . . . of his grandfather, Benjamin Brandon, being wounded in the knee hiding in the bushes and letting the Tories and British pass him unnoticed. (pp. 186-188)

A Will and Cemetery Records. James Brandon, father of Benjamin, did not mention the mother of his children, nor all his children, in his will. One son James, a boy of eighteen, was killed in the Revolutionary service, 11 April 1781. The inscription of his mother, Elizabeth (?Arm-

strong) Brandon, in Thyatira Cemetery, near Salisbury, N. C., states she was born in Sept. 1734; was married in April 1754; and died 18 June 1783, aged 49, being the mother of six sons and three daughters. She was probably a close relative of Abel Armstrong and James Armstrong, named in documents in connection with the Brandons.

The will of her husband, James Brandon of Rowan County was dated June 17, 1790. He bequeaths to his sons, William, Benjamin, John, Abel and Armstrong Brandon, and to his daughter Jane Wilson and wife Rebecca. The land divided among them is on both the north and south sides of Fourth Creek. Abel and Armstrong are specifically named "my two youngest sons." Abel Armstrong and James' son Benjamin Brandon are appointed executors. (Rowan County Wills, Book B, p. 49.)

On 3 Aug. 1790 Benjamin Brandon was appointed guardian to "Armstrong Brandon son of the late James Brandon until of full age." On the same day John Brandon and William Brandon were named as guardians for Abel Brandon minor.

These facts shed more light on the comments made in *The Knox Family,* without access to the cemetery and guardianship records.

> It is not known with certainty the maiden name of James Brandon's wife. In the will she is called Rebecca. It is thought by the Brandon descendants that she was an Armstrong. Abel Brandon, we learn, maried a Miss Jeanette Knox at Knoxville, Tenn., about 1794. . . .
>
> Armstrong Brandon, born about 1778; married in Piqua, Ohio, Eliza McCorkle, daughter of Joseph McCorkle, who had emigrated to Ohio from Rowan county, N.C. . . . Armstrong Brandon was named for Capt. Armstrong, who was killed at the battle of Ramsour's Mills. He removed to Corydon, Ind., in 1816; there he was State printer, editor of the *Indiana Gazette,* and U. S. P. M.
>
> The three Brandon brothers, Benjamin, Abel and Armstrong, settled in Miami county, Ohio, about 1808. It seems that John Brandon died in North Carolina in 1806. . . . Some of the Abel Brandon family have it by tradition that one of the sons of James Brandon was killed in battle in the Revolutionary War, and that his horse came home a distance of seventeen miles without his rider, and that his friends went to the field

> of battle and found his corpse. If such was the case, we do not know his name. It would not, of course, be mentioned in the Will, as that was made years after the war. (pp. 191-192)

This was the son James Brandon, who died 11 April 1781, age 18, killed in service and whose marker is in the Thyatira Cemetery.

Benjamin Brandon, husband of Mary Knox, was, as stated above, the son of James Brandon and his first wife Elizabeth (?Armstrong). James in turn was the son of John Brandon, Jr. and his wife Elizabeth. John was for years a member of the County Court of Rowan County. His inscription on a stone in Thyatira Cemetery reads: "Here Lies the Remains of John Brandon Esq'r Who departed this life April ye 27th, 1775, Aged 62 years." So he was born in 1713. His widow Elizabeth survived him many years, her will being dated 4 Sept. 1797, and proved in May 1810.

This John, Jr., was son of a John Brandon who was born in 1691, and died 15 May 1756, aged 65 years, according to his inscription in Thyatira Church graveyard. His first wife, name unknown, was the mother of his five children. He later married Elizabeth, the widow of John Locke. She was born in 1705; and died 10 August 1760, being buried beside her husband, John Brandon.

This John Brandon, Sr., settled in Pennsylvania prior to 1736, according to land warrants issued there. He was prominent as one of the Justices of Rowan County, N. C. "When the Rev. Hugh McAdan passed through Rowan, he stopped a night with Mr. Brandon, whom he styles 'His Own Countryman,' that is from Pennsylvania, where McAdan was born."

For more particulars on this Brandon family from Pennsylvania and of Rowan County, see *Finding Your Forefathers in America,* pp. 342-349.

Thus from a small beginning a family from California has been dependably traced from there to Ohio, thence to North Carolina, and finally to the Brandon family in Pennsylvania.

Another Case of "Born in Ohio." In searching the census of Darke County, Ohio, 1850, for the family of

William Adams and Jane Brandon, a number of Brandon families were encountered of an entirely different line from that of Jane's father, Benjamin, although of common origin some generations back. Let us follow one of them.

On page 958 of the census of Richland Township, Darke County, 29th Nov. 1850, appears this entry (No. 5008, F Ohio 4, Part 4 is the call number of the film from which it was copied):

			age				born
131	137	Alexander B. Brandon	29	M	Farmer	1100	Ohio
		Ann Brandon	24	F			Penn.
		John T. Brandon	3	M			Ohio
		Riley M. Brandon	1	M			do

In seeking to penetrate the mystery of this "born in Ohio" we are led to consult the *History of Darke County, Ohio,* 1880 (Ohio D 4c). There on pages 742-743 is a sketch of Alexander B. Brandon and his family, tracing them to another Ohio township, and then into West Virginia.

> ALEXANDER B. BRANDON, farmer and stock-raiser, Sec. 27; P. O. Versailles; was born in Wayne Township, Darke Co., Dec. 14, 1820; his father, James R., was born in West Virginia April 14, 1792, and married Anna Hole, Sept. 15, 1818; she was born in Butler Co., Ohio, Jan. 22, 1798; he came to Darke Co. with his sister Elizabeth in 1818. Mrs. J. R. Brandon's father, Zachariah Hole, moved to this county the same year. Mrs. Anna (Hole) Brandon died near Hill Grove, in 1857, and J. R. Brandon died Feb. 24, 1876, in this township.
>
> Alexander, the subject of this sketch, has always worked hard to dig out a home for himself and family; since 1846 he has cleared, almost lone-handed, upwards of 60 acres of heavily timbered land; by his untiring industry, aided by his good wife, he is blessed with a good home, and a favorable promise of comfort in their declining years. He married Anna Shafer, April 9, 1846, daughter of John Shafer (see Job M. Shafer's biography in this work); she was born in Bedford Co., Penn., April 30, 1826; they had ten children, viz.:
>
> John T., born March 24, 1847, and died while in the service of his country at Cumberland Md., Aug. 22, 1864.

Riley M., born March 18, 1849.
Job S., born Aug. 25, 1851; died Aug. 8, 1866.
Dorothy A., born Jan. 29, 1854, and married Nathaniel Kershner.
Eugene, born Nov. 29, 1856.
Aaron, born April 20, 1859.
James F., born Oct. 9, 1861.
Noah, born Feb. 2, 1864.
Arthur M., born July 12, 1866.
Retha Belle, born April 7, 1872.
He owns 212 acres of good land and a fine home.

Such an account, with names and dates obviously obtained directly from the family, possibly from a family Bible, in connection with the writing of the biography, surely emphasizes the fact that county and town histories are not to be overlooked in genealogical research.

Limitations of American Census Records. Confirmation of statements afforded us in this sketch is found in the same census of Darke County for 1850. The family of the father of Alexander B. Brandon is found living in another township, his name being given with the wrong initial.

p. 581 Greenville Township, Darke Co., 30th August 1850

			age				born
239	245	James A. Brandon	58	M	Miller	4000	Va.
		Anna M. Brandon	52	F			Ohio
		Maria Brandon	16	F			Ohio
		Elizabeth Brandon	18	F			Ohio
		James Brandon	13	M			Ohio
		Hannah A. Brandon	10	F			Ohio
		Margaret Brandon	8	F			Ohio

You will recognize the virtue and also the limitations of such a census record. His initial is wrong; it should be "R". The sketch says he was born in West Virginia, giving the exact date. Of course there was no West Virginia in existence until the Civil War, so Virginia would be the correct designation in 1850. But we shall look for his birthplace in that portion which later became West Virginia. The parents, as per the sketch, were married in 1818; but the oldest child listed in the census account was born in 1832. There must be older children. The explanation is that Zachariah, born 1819 (named after his grandfather Zach-

ariah Hole), Alexander B., born 14 Dec. 1820, David, born 1822 and Lewis, born 1829, appear in the census of 1850 as heads of their own families. There are also probably a married daughter or so as yet undetected. But still the census, with all its limitations, gives a wealth of information about the descendants of James R.

A Helpful Genealogical Query. In the search for the Brandon family of Pennsylvania and its offshoots, this inquiry was found printed by William Henry Egle in his *Notes And Queries* (Pa. Pub. D), 1896, p. 159. If you look closely you can detect a connection with the family we discussed above, although an error partly disguises the fact, because of the tendency to misread the capital letter "R" for an "A" or "M."

Genealogical Information Wanted.

BRANDON.

Alexander Brandon, b. March 13, 1748, in York county, Pa., d. March 17, 1813; m. April 19, 1773, Elizabeth Mabinette, b. June 11, 1749; d. April 14, 1792. Their children were:

i.	Abigail,	b. April	17, 1770.
ii.	Absalom,	b. April	4, 1774.
iii.	Anne,	b. March	9, 1776.
iv.	Elizabeth,	b. Feb.	19, 1778.
v.	Mary,	b. Jan.	22, 1780.
vi.	William,	b. Aug.	29, 1781.
vii.	Jane,	b. Dec.	16, 1783.
viii.	Hannah,	b. Feb.	10, 1787.
ix.	Alexander,	b. April	4, 1789.
x.	James Mabinette,	b. April	14, 1792.

The early ancestor of Alexander Brandon is wanted.

The last child, James Mabinette, was actually James Robinette, and his mother was Elizabeth Robinette. The Robinettes were a York County, Pa., family. This James Robinette has exactly the same birth date as the James R. Brandon of the census of Greenville Township, Darke Co., for 1850. In error, his name in the census, as already quoted above, was erroneously given as James A. Brandon. Surely, in using transcribed records, we must watch for mis-copied letters and surnames.

Since James R. Brandon, in 1850, gave his birthplace as "Virginia" we locate him in the census and tax lists as living in what is now Preston Co., West Virginia. A card was also found for him in the Temple Records Index Bureau, which gave his place of residence as Preston Co., W. Va. You will have noted that his birthplace, as given in the above query, was York Co., Pa.

Biography from a County History. This leads naturally to a *History of Preston County, West Virginia* (W. Va. P. 2b), in which, on pages 326-327, is a sketch of Alexander Brandon and his family that effectually links them with the Brandons of Darke County, Ohio. In part it reads:

> Alexander Brandon, a native of York county, Pennsylvania, appears to have come to the Little Sandy of Grant in 1777. He lived on the John Matlick farm. His hewed-log house, 26 by 30 feet in size, possessed what was then the rarity of a shingled roof. His wife seems to have been a sister to the Robinetts, James, Joseph and Samuel, who left Preston at a very early day. Richard Brandon, a brother, lived on the D. S. Forquer place, but went to Ohio about 1808, as did probably Joseph, who seems to have been a third brother. The only other brother to remain was Jonathan, who in 1799 purchased the land on which stands the village that was named for him (Brandonville). The Brandons were much respected and influential. For their day they were men of more than ordinary education. Alexander was for many years commissioner of the revenue. He was the first colonel of the 104th regiment of state militia, and held that position till 1812, the year prior to his death. Eight of his children went to Darke county, Ohio, where their descendants have become numerous.

The names of Alexander's children are given, all ten corresponding exactly to the list published in the query, except that James Robinette, the last child, is recorded here as "James E." He was one, it says, who went to Ohio.

A Will in York County, Pa. You will have noted that Alexander was said to have brothers Richard, Joseph and Jonathan Brandon, apparently all born in York County, Pa. In that county is located the will of John Brandon, of Huntington Township, dated 17 Sept. 1774; proved 20 Oct. 1774. He names his wife Mary, "my eldest son Thomas

Brandon . . . my grandson John Brandon son of Thomas Brandon . . . to be Paid at the time my youngest Son Joseph arrives at the age of twenty one years . . . my second son John Brandon . . . my Grandson John Brandon son of John Brandon . . . my Daughter Jane wife of James Graham . . . my Third Son William Brandon . . . my fourth Son Alexander Brandon . . . my fifth son James Brandon . . . my Six and Seventh sons Walter Brandon and Richard Brandon . . . my Eighth Son Jonathan Brandon . . . my Young Daughter Mary Brandon . . . my Youngest Son Joseph. Letters testamentary granted 20 Oct. 1774 to James Brandon and Walter Brandon of the Estate of John Brandon late of York County Yeoman Deceased." (York Co. Wills, Book, pp. 250-253 [F. Pa. Y la, Part 2].)

This will effectually establishes the connection between the Brandon family of Richland Township, Darke Co., Ohio, and that of Preston Co., W., Va., with the Brandon family of Huntington Township, York Co. (now Adams Co.), Pa. The records of this latter branch are given in *Finding Your Forefathers in America,* pages 345-349. Here they link up with the Rowan County, N.C., Brandons also.

Chapter 12 •

THE RECORDS ARE ALL BURNED

People have a habit of discouraging themselves when it comes to genealogical research. They tend habitually to magnify the difficulty of the problem facing them. To listen to the tenor of their remarks you would be almost persuaded that their particular ancestral puzzle is impossible of solution. One of their favorite and would be all-convincing declarations is that this particular line can never be traced, because *"all the records were burned."*

Fire is a great destroyer, whether in peace or in war. Courthouse after courthouse has gone up in flames. Occasionally the precious records in them were rescued; far more often they were entirely consumed. There is no denying the serious handicap in genealogy of burned records. Probably there is no person in tracing all his various lines of ancestry who does not encounter the charred and blackened records he needed to form certain connecting links. Think what an irreparable loss it was when the wills and parish registers and other documents in the Four Courts of Dublin were almost utterly destroyed in an explosion and fire. Where they once were is now only a figurative and forbidding shell hole.

The Finality of Total Destruction of Records. So when one asserts with unwavering conviction that "all the records were burned" it does seem to sound the death knell to genealogical hopes in that area. It has the ring of finality — *all* the records are gone, utterly and irredeemably. The completeness of the loss is overwhelming. There is no appeal from such a dearth of genealogical sources.

Thus we tend to discourage ourselves.

But let us analyze the situation more closely. Are *all* the records gone, or only some of them? Is it actually true there was a fire which burned the records we need? If so,

what other records are in existence which might partially replace them? Where are these records kept? What help may be found in the courthouses of adjoining counties. What records were kept on a town, or state, or federal basis? Where may these be consulted? What church or cemetery records may be utilized that were not in the fire?

Such a careful scrutiny of possible sources usually lets in the light of hope. Ordinarily there were other records than those burned in the courthouse or in the church or the town hall. These may be wisely consulted to the very best advantage, giving full weight to the evidence they present, even though it may be meager in the extreme, and often the impossible problem finds a happy and certain solution.

Be ye not therefore discouraged.

What Other Records Survived? There may have been family Bibles kept that can be located. Old family letters and papers may come to the rescue. Town and county histories, containing genealogies of the families once residing there, may deliver you from your dilemma. There is always the personal knowledge of relatives which may be drawn upon, particularly for more recent times. But today, in almost every large family, there is at least one genealogist who has been gathering records for years, and may have just the information you need. You are entitled to draw upon every possible source that experience and your disciplined imagination can teach you may exist.

If your family belonged to a church, and the church kept records that are still preserved, there is hope for you and your yearned for solution. These may now be in a church or in a civic record repository, and may require some effort on your part to find them. But the result may be eminently worth it.

Of national records there are the census records and military records. The land grants on a state basis are a fruitful source. Military records in the National Archives may contribute much. Still more helpful are the census records for the whole country, arranged on a county basis. Lands records can prove able to give the desired facts. All of these may open the door to new discoveries. No one family lived forever in one county only.

A Problem in Northumberland Co., Va. Clement Aldridge and his wife Elizabeth became settlers in what was then known as Bowtracy and Fairfield parishes, embracing the section of Northumberland County, Virginia, north of the Great Wicocomico River (later shortened to Wicomico). In 1698 these two parishes were united to form the parish of St. Stephen. Fortunately the old parish register of St. Stephen's parish, although it evidently went through a fire, has been preserved, and is now at the State Library at Richmond, Virginia. A microfilm copy of it, and also a typed copy, are in our Library. It is in a mutilated condition, edges of some of the first pages being charred and worn and wasted away.

On page 3 are recorded these entries of the children of Clement Aldredge:

.....ent Aldridge Son to Clement was borne Sep.....
.....d Aldredge Daughter to Do was borne Mar.....
.....ce Aldridge Daughter to Do was borne Oct.....
.....m Aldridge Son to Do was borne Feb.....
.....aac Aldridge Son to Do was borne S.....
.....ohn Aldredge Son to Do was borne Feb.....

It is known from other records in the county court that Clement had a son Clement, Jr. Since the younger Clement was a witness in Court in 1691, it is presumable that these children were born between the years 1672 and 1682. William Aldridge, the one described in the fourth entry above, was an adult in 1700. The other sons were evidently Isaac and John; one of the daughters may have been either Alice or Grace; the other may possibly have been Winifred. The next entry in this church register in point of date and alphabetical sequence is in the year 1696 on page 4. Intervening year dates are missing. (*Northumberland Co. Births and Deaths,* 1650-1810, p. 3.)

Other facts are gleaned from that portion of Northumberland County records that were not burned. On 2 Apr. 1677 Clemt *Arlidge* witnessed a will. On 17 Apr. 1678 Clement *Aldridge* was party to a suit for debt. He was a carpenter or joiner by trade and had an apprentice bound to him 21 Aug. 1678. Clemt *Aldrige* was a tithable of Bowtracy parish 7 June 1679. On 19 Nov. 1679 Clemt Aldridge

was paid for mending Bowtracy Church. He appears in various court entries in 1684 and 1688. On 22 June 1693 "William Beane was arrested at the suit of Clement Aldridge & Elizabeth his wife." The final entry regarding him is recorded thus:

> "Aldridge's Will proved 19 Jan. 1698-1699
> Upon the mocon of Elizabeth Aldridge Execrx a Probate is granted her of the Last Will and Testament of Clemt Aldridge deced. the said Will being proved by the oaths of David Straughan & Mary Tulles Witnesses to the said Will and the same is admitted to Record. (Northumberland Co. Order Book, vol. 5, p. 3.)

Unfortunately this will is missing, being destroyed in a fire at the courthouse a short time later. It would undoubtedly have been of great aid.

Later Court Records That Were Preserved. From the records that did survive we are able to reconstruct some of the records of this family. The will of the son, Clement, Jr., was proved 20 Mar. 1706; he had a first wife Elizabeth, and a second wife Mary. William, born in February, about the year 1678 (the day and year of his birth being obliterated from the old St. Stephen's Parish Register), had a son recorded in this same partially destroyed register:

> . . . n sone to Wm Aldredge was born May 16 170. . . ." (p. 3)

This was evidently the son John who was under 21 in 1724, as mentioned in his father's will. This would fix his year of birth definitely between the years 1705 and 1709.

On 19 May 1703 Wm. *Arledge* and Alice his wife acknowledged a deed in court. (Northumberland Co. Order Book, vol. 5, p. 246.) Her maiden name proves to have been Fallin. He married a second wife named Sarah . . . William's name appears frequently in the court records, his surname being spelled ALDRIDGE and ALDREDGE, but most frequently ARLEDGE. Some of his descendants had the name gradually change from Aldredge to Aldred and Allred. Of them there are numerous descendants.

The Inventory of the estate of Wm Aldridge Decd was presented in the County Court 20 Jan. 1724, by "Sarah Aldridge widdow and relict of Wm Aldridge." On 17 Feb. 1724-5 "This Inventory on the Estate of Wm Arledg Decd was Exhibited into Court by Sarah Arledge Execx of the sd Decd and is admitted to Record." (Northumberland Co. Record Book, vol. 19, p. 375.) The will of William Arledge is preserved, in which he bequeaths to his sons William and John Arledge his tract of land lying "in wiccocomoco parrish," William to have the plantation. "Likewise I Give my Still to my three Sons Wm: Jno & Clemt Arledge . . . my wife Sarah Arledge Dureing her widowhood . . . my Daughter Jane my Sons Wm Jno Clemt & Isaac Arledge . . . William Fallin Shall have the Tuition of my son William until he comes to the age of Twenty one years and that Charles Fallin have the tuition of my Son Jno until he comes to the age of twenty years. . . . my wife Sarah to be Exectx." Dated 25 August 1724. (Northumberland Co. Wills, *Ibid.*, p. 389.)

William's widow did not survive him many years. Her inventory was presented to court 19 April 1727. (*Ibid.*, vol. 20, p. 70a.) A record of the division of her estate indicates which of the children of William were her own. John Callahan as Guardian to Isaac Arledge and Sarah Arledge accounted for the estate of these orphans.

The children of William Aldredge or Arledge moved far afield, into North and South Carolina and elsewhere.

English Ancestry Found. In order to complete the family record of the first Clement Aldredge and his wife Elizabeth it was desirable to trace them, if possible, to their home in England.

The origin of this surname traces back to ancient Anglo-Saxon times. It is said to be a compound of the Anglo-Saxon "ald" or "eald" meaning *old* and "rad" or "red" signifying *wise counsel.* In the old Gothic language it appeared as ALDRED and in English as ELDRED or ALDRED. (Robert Ferguson: *Surnames As a Science,* 1883, p. 41.) Another explanation given is that the names signifies "all-dread" or "all-fear." This author then lists these equivalent surnames:

ALDRED (Saxon) All-fear
ALDRIDGE (Saxon) The same as Aldred, of which it is a corruption. (William Arthur Sheldon: *Etymological Dictionary of Family and Christian Names,* 1857, p. 50.)

In confirmation of this conclusion, the surname of Eldred in Yarmouth, Mass., changed by the third generation to Eldredge and Eldridge. One of the early settlers of Dedham, Mass., was Henry Aldridge or Aldridg. In four entries from the church records he is called Alldred in three of them; in the fourth (his burial) he is called Henery Alldridge. (Dedham Vital Records, First Church Records.)

This Henry Aldred or Aldridge was from Brampton, Suffolk, son of Thomas Aldred or Aldered of Brampton. Samuel Eldred of Cambridge, Mass., and Stonington, Conn., came from Lavenham, Suffolk, England. It is reasonable, therefore, to look in Suffolk and in the adjoining county of Norfolk, for the origin of the Aldred-Eldred family. In all probability this area was their original home, and persons bearing these surname variations were there from very early times.

In our copy of Boyd's *Marriage Index* for the county of Norfolk was found the marriage in the year 1668 of Clement Aldridge & Elizabeth Tills! It occurred in the parish of Worstead, Norfolk. So a search of Worstead registers of christenings, marriages and burials was made, and with gratifying results. Clement Aldridge or Aldrich was the son of Clement Aldrich or Aldridge and Susan Boswell. Clement, Sr., was the son of John Aldridge, Aldrige or Aldrich and his wife Agnes or Ann Rolfe. His father John was evidently the son of Rev. Henry *Aldred,* who was Vicar at Worstead in the year 1553. His son of the same name was Vicar there and in adjoining parishes, and was buried at Worstead, 1 Dec. 1648.

Entries from a Parish Register. These records from Worstead parish are pertinent to the investigation we are making:

MARRIAGES:

1584 9 Feb. John Aldriche & Agnes Roffe
1626 2 July Clement Aldrich & Susan Boswell

DEATHS:

1610 11 Jan. Agnes w. John Aldrich.

There are six christenings of children of this couple. John's son Clement had six children christened there between the years 1627 and 1640. The one of greatest interest is this:

1636 25 Sep. Clement s. Clement and Susan Aldrich.

This little son grew up and married twice, and had one wife buried and several children christened there before he and his wife Elizabeth migrated to Northumberland Co., Virginia.

BURIALS:

1668 1 Sep. Alice w. Clement Aldridge.

MARRIAGES:

1668 18 Oct. Clement Aldridge & Elizabeth Tills.
1673 12 May Samuel Pycroft & Alice Aldered (sister of Clement).

BAPTISMS:

1669 22 Aug. Elizabeth d. Clement and Elizabeth Aldridge.
1670 9 Oct. Mary d. Clement and Elizabeth Aldridge. (Worstead, Norfolk, Parish Register.)

Resume of Steps Taken. The will of this Clement Aldridge in Virginia was burned in the courthouse fire; and the church register was charred and part of the names and dates were missing. But court records and other wills and similar documents enabled us, despite the loss, to reconstruct measureably the family genealogy. Taking due note of demonstrated changes in surnames, and utilizing Boyd's *Marriage Index* we were able to locate the home parish of Clement Aldridge and Elizabeth Tills. Once located, the parish registers of Worstead yielded very important facts which the fire in Northumberland County, Virginia, had not consumed. Still other records have been consulted, which add interesting and confirmatory information.

County Records Destroyed. A lineage was traced back to William Bernard of Cumberland County, Virginia. The problem was to find his parentage. In Cumberland

County Deed Book 2, pp. 230-231, was found an indenture which gave the precious information as to the name and residence of William Bernard's father:

> Indenture 22 Dec. 1754 between William Bernard of the County of Cumberland, gentleman, and John Fleming, the Younger, of the same County, Attorney at Law, for 5s. a tract in the parish of Southam, Cumberland County, formerly in the parish of Saint James, Goochland County, on Willises River and the Branches thereof, containing 1092½ acres, being the land whereon the said William Bernard lately dwelt and including all the land devised to the said William Bernard *by the last will and Testament of his deceased Father, Robert Bernard, Gent., late of Gloucester County.* (Cumberland Co. Deed Book 2, pp. 230-231.)

This was wonderful news. William was the son of Robert Bernard of Gloucester County, Virginia. Then comes the unhappy discovery that the county records of Gloucester County "were all burned," a sad and discouraging loss. Yet the search continued for the father of this Robert. Other proof was found.

In August, 1734, the Virginia Legislature passed a special statute permitting this same Robert Bernard to exchange 250 acres of his land in Petsworth Parish, in Gloucester County, which had been given him in *his father's will,* and was restricted to his male descendants. He wished to trade this for 400 acres in Kingston Parish of the same county, but was debarred from this by the terms of his father's will.

A Special Statute. The document, now printed in Hening's *Statutes at Large,* Vol. IV, pp. 457-459, recites that

> Whereas William Bernard, late of the county of Gloucester, gent., deceased, was, in his life time, and at the time of his death, seised in fee simple, of one parcel of land containing two hundred and fifty acres, . . . in the parish of Petsworth, in the county of Gloucester, aforesaid; and so being seised, did make his last will and testament in writing, bearing date the twenty seventh day of April, in the year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and four; and thereby . . . did devise the said parcel of land . . . *to his son Robert,* and his heirs male, forever; and some time after making the said will, the said William Bernard died, and the said Robert Bernard entered into the said land, and was and is thereof seised.

Robert was then officially given permission to make the exchange, in spite of the restriction in his father's will. And so another generation was added to the pedigree, even though the county records had all been burned.

Land Grants and Patents. When the county records and also the church registers for a given area, as in a number of Virginia counties like Gloucester, are burned, then records kept on a Colony or State basis come to the aid of the searcher. Land grants made by the state and patents issued by them, or land warrants given by Pennsylvania, are of great value in locating the ancestor at a specific period with the grant giving particulars as to the place location of the land. For examples see *Finding Your Forefathers in America,* Chapters 5 and 29.

Tax Lists can also perform the same function.

Census Records That Were Burned. It is a great and serious loss that some U.S. Federal Census Records have been burned. That for the year 1890 is entirely gone for the whole country. There is only one county in Tennessee, Rutherford, which has its census records preserved for the year 1810. For the first federal census, that of 1790, the population schedules or census records were burned for six of the present states. Note these words from the printed Introduction to the 1790 Census:

"The First Census of the United States (1790) comprised an enumeration of the inhabitants of the present states of Connecticut, Delaware, Georgia, Kentucky, Maine, Maryland, Massachusetts, New Hampshire, New Jersey, New York, North Carolina, Pennsylvania, Rhode Island, South Carolina, Tennessee, Vermont and Virginia.

"A complete set of the schedules for each state, with a summary for the counties, and in many cases for towns, was filed in the State Department, but unfortunately they are not now complete, *the returns for the states of Delaware, Georgia, Kentucky, New Jersey, Tennessee, and Virginia having been destroyed when the British burned the Capitol at Washington during the War of* 1812."

In order to supply this grave deficiency in Virginia state enumerations or tax lists for the years 1782-1785 have

been published in two volumes. For all Kentucky counties a compiled list of taxpayers for about the year 1790 has been printed. These partly replace the burned schedules for these two states.

Listing All Other Available Sources. It is a serious error to conclude that because one particular type of source records is burned nothing can be done. There are always other records which may be consulted. It is a wise practice to compile carefully a complete list of *all the sources* which may be utilized for a given area at a specified period of years. Then if some are burned or missing, check them off your list, but note the ones remaining which may serve you well.

For example, we have many cases of where our Ward Church Records have been burned, with all their wealth of information. Make your list of all other sources which may be consulted. Since 1907 the Form E Genealogical Reports have been sent annually to the Church Historian's Office, where they have been bound and preserved. These are actual transcripts of all the vital information in the original Ward Record. Better still, for each Ward of the Church whose records have been sent to to the Historian's Office, a microfilm copy has been made of those Ward Records of Members, in chronological sequence, followed by the Form E Reports in annual time sequence. The proper place to consult Ward Records is now at the Genealogical Library. Look in the Surname File under "Ward Records" for the particular Ward where your people lived.

Thus it is abundantly evident from all quarters that there is actually no case where your genealogical problem is impossible because "all the records are burned." There are always others which were preserved, and these can be studied to advantage.

Chapter 13 •

USE OF LAND RECORDS

Importance of Knowing the Place of Residence. One of the chief ways of identifying any person is by *place*. We need for this purpose to know his place of birth, places of residence, place of marriage, places of birth of his children, place of his death and place of burial. Without this place identification we may fall into the error of confusing him with another person of the same name and age and even with a wife of the same name.

The ownership of specific pieces of land provides an excellent means of determining which one of several persons of like names is our own ancestor. The disposition of this land we know he owned, by deed or will or otherwise, gives us positive proof of those related to him. Land grants on a state-wide basis but designating detailed locations enable us to ascertain in what county the ancestor made his home, so that we may avail ourselves of the records of that particular county.

Landed Possessions Locate Residence. Volumes 24-26 of the *Pennsylvania Archives,* 3rd series, contain the names of "Warrantees of Land" in the then Colony of Pennsylvania. Here are three entries from Vol. 24, relating to grants in what was then Lancaster County:

	Acres	*Date of Survey*	*Page*
Brandon, George	60	Aug. 11, 1743	361
Brendon, George, Sen'r	100	Sep. 3, 1743	361
Brandon, George	50	Jan. 10, 1744	362

These names were copied from the original record books in the Land Office of the Department of Internal Affairs.

Some parts of Lancaster County became Cumberland County and other parts York County. Note how these records obtained from Harrisburg, Pa., enable us to locate places of residence, and even a family relationship.

> This portion of Cumberland County which is now South Middleton Township was settled at a very early period. . . . The earliest warrant of land which lay in what is now South Middleton, of which we have any knowledge, was one granted to George Brandon, in 1743, of a tract of land which lay on the York County line on the turnpike. (*History of Cumberland Co., Pa.*, by Samuel P. Bates [Pa. 2, Part 2], p. 348.)

A much later patent refers back to the original warrant and survey to George Brandon, Senior.

> Pa. Patent Book H, Volume 73, page 243. In consideration of the money paid by George Brandon, Senior, at the granting of the Warrant hereinafter mentioned and of the sum of one hundred and thirty four dollars in full of the purchase money, interest and fees paid by C. W. Ahl and the other owners . . . there is granted to them . . . a certain tract of land being part of a larger tract of 128 acres 105 perches and allowance, situate in South Middleton Township, Cumberland County . . . along the line between the Counties of Cumberland and Adams . . . containing 95 acres and 177 perches and allowance. Which said tract of land was Surveyed in pursuance of a Warrant dated the 3rd day of September 1743 granted to the above named George Brandon, Senior, whose right in and to the said parcel or part has since become vested in C. W. Ahl, D. V. Ahl, John Sheffer and George Sheffer. Dated 2 June 1875.

A George Brandon of direct interest was born in 1702. He immigrated to Pennsylvania and on 11 August 1743 received a warrant for 60 acres of land in Manahan Township, Lancaster (now York) County, Pennsylvania. This land was patented to him in 1766. Shortly thereafter he moved to Rowan County, North Carolina. He died there 14 December 1772, aged 70 years, and was buried in the cemetery of Thyatira Church. He married Mary Ann or Marian. . . . She survived him several years, as did their eight children, including a son George, and a daughter Mary, who married John McGuire in Rowan County, 16 March 1767.

> Patent Book AA, Volume 8, p. 24. Patent to Geo. Brandon. In Pursuance of a Warrant dated the eleventh Day of August 1743 there was surveyed unto George Brandon a certain Tract of Land situate in Manahan Township in the County of York . . . by John Karr's Land and the South Mountain . . . thence by the South Mountain . . . by Michael Mumbert's land . . . containing 61 acres of Land and Allowance of

Six Acres PCent for Road as by the Said Warrant and Survey remaining in the Surveyor Generals Office and from thence Certified into the Secretarys Office, for 9 pounds 9 shillings and one Penny paid by the said George Brandon. Dated 17 September 1766.

A Deed Gives the Wife's Name. Essential to the identification of this George Brandon is the name of his wife. This deed gives that information:

York County, Pa., Deeds, Book C, pp. 188-190, (F. Pa. Y 1, Part 13): 11 Nov. 1766. George Brandon Yeoman of the Township of Monaghan County of York and Province of Pencilvenia and Mary Ann his Wife to Michael Mumbert of same, Yeoman

Whereas the Honourable Thomas Penn and Richard Penn Esquis true the absolute Proprietors and Governors in Chief . . . did Grant and Confirm unto the said George Brandon a Certain Tract or Parcel of Land Situate Lyeing and being in the Said Township of Monaghan and County of York (bounds given) . . . by John Karrs land and the South Mountain . . . to said Michael Mumberts Land . . . Containing sixty one Acres of Land and the Allowance of Six Acres pr Cent for Road and Highways as by their Patent Bearing Date at Philadelphia 17 Sept. 1766 and Recorded in the Office for Recording of Deeds Co. of Philadelphia Patent Book AA Volume the Eighth page 24 the 18 Sep 1766 . . . for 200 pounds . . . and the said George Brandon and Maryann his Wife . . . 11 Nov. 1766.
Witnesses:

Moses Blackburn
Jean Lackland

George Brandon
hir

Maryann O Brandon

mark

. . . maryann his Wife being of full Age . . . freely and Willingly became a party to the Same, 11-11 mo. Nov. 1766.

George Brandon and his wife Maryann must have removed immediately to Rowan Co., N.C., where his daughter Mary Brandon married John McGuire, 16 March 1767. His will is printed in *Finding Your Forefathers in America*, pp. 29-30. It begins: "2 Nov. 1772 I George Brandon of the Province of North Carolina, Rowan County, Farmer, . . . To Marian my dearly beloved wife," etc.

Thus by means of a land warrant, a land patent, a deed and a will this family is traced from York Co., Pa., to Rowan Co., N. C.

Rowan County Land Entries. George left a son of the same name. In 1778 and 1784 this younger George entered tracts of land on the waters of Hunting Creek in Rowan County.

> Land Entries 1778: No. 275 George Brandon enters 640 acres of land in Rowan County on the Branches of Hunting Creek, Joining John Vancleave's Entry and Survey on the North, John Brandon Entry on the East, Thomas Holmans South, John Grahams Improvement West also John McGuires Survey East lying and being on both sides of Callaghan's Branch. Feb. 6th 1778.
>
> No. 952 Grant to George Brandon of a tract of 458 acres on the waters of Hunting Creek in Rowan Co., beginning at a hickory . . . John Brandons corner . . . his own corner . . . adjoining James Davis, John McGuires line . . . with his line . . . John Graham's corner . . . with his line . . . Brian(?) Gaithers line . . . John Brandons line. By Alex Martin, 4 Nov. 1784. Recorded.

The Land Law of 1820. "With independence from Great Britain the King's domain became a national domain. Before the Constitution was written, the Confederation Congress set up the basic law of the American land system in the Ordinances of 1785 and 1787. While these provided for the survey and sale in the territories, neither the details of sale nor the prices and methods of payment were satisfactory. For the next thirty-five years legislators experimented with various means by which small holders could secure lands, revenues accrue to government, and speculators' activities be curbed. The Land Law of 1820, a simple law, remedied a number of these problems. It provided for sale to actual settlers of tracts as small as a quarter-section at a cash price of $1.25 per acre." (*Genealogical Material in Oregon Donation Land Claims,* Vol. 1.)

As an example of how this law operated here is a copy of a Receiver's Receipt:

> B. B. Overton, Receiver, to Paul A. Schettler. Acknowledges receipt of $200.00, being in full for the Southeast quarter of Section 9, Township 1 South, Range 1 East, (Salt Lake

City), containing 160 acres, at $1.25 per acre. Dated Oct. 15, 1869. Recorded Nov. 16, 1869, in Book "D" of Deeds, page 410.

Next year the Patent was issued to the purchaser in this form:

The United States of America to Paul A. Schettler. GRANTS: The Southeast quarter of Section 9, Township 1 South, Range 1 East, in the District of Lands subject to sale at Salt Lake City, Utah, containing 160 acres, according to the official plat of the survey of said lands returned to the General Land Office by the Surveyor, which said tract has been purchased by Paul A. Schettler.

PURSUANT to the provisions of the Act of Congress of April 24, 1820, entitled "An Act making further provisions for the sale of Public Lands."

Patent dated July 15, 1870. Recorded Nov. 27, 1871 in Book "E" of Deeds, pages 473-4.

On March 20 1871 Paul A. Schettler and Josephine Schettler, his wife, sold this property to James Phillips. Recorded Oct. 12, 1872 in Book "F" of Deeds, page 291.

Oregon Donation Land Claims. The Donation Land Act provided that there should be granted in the Territory of Oregon to every white settler or occupant of the public lands, including American half-breed Indians, above the age of eighteen years, being a citizen of the United States, or having made a declaration of his intention to become a citizen, "the quantity of one half section, or three hundred and twenty acres of land, if a singleman, and if a married man . . . the quantity of one section, or six hundred and forty acres, one half to himself, and the other half to his wife, to be held by her in her own right."

The Florida Act of 1842 and the Oregon Donation Land Law of 1850 were the only instances until the Homestead Act of 1862 in which an outright gift of land was made to private individuals. The Oregon Law was designated to reward and encourage the setttlement of the Pacific Northwest. The anticipation of free lands must be considered a primary factor in bringing population to Oregon between 1842 and 1855.

The Genealogical Forum of Portland, Oregon, has done a highly commendable thing in abstracting and print-

ing two volumes of *Genealogical Material in Oregon Donation Land Claims*. These contain most valuable material for the genealogist. The Foreword to Vol. I states:

> The book should be of interest to genealogists because of the family data contained, and to historians everywhere because proof of Oregon settlers and their paths of migration are shown.
>
> Each abstract will show for the settler in the following order his certificate number; his name; his place of residence; date and place of birth; date and place of marriage; first name of wife and last name when it appears in the record; date he settled his claim; names of those who signed affidavits (here will be found names of friends and relatives of the family). Pertinent family material entered in the file or any data on naturalization will also be included in the abstracts.

A few examples of these abstracts of land claims will reveal what very valuable material for genealogy they contain.

> No. 273 RUDOLPH, Casper, Marion Co; b 1792, Austria on the Rhine; SC (Settled claim) 16 May 1848; m Mary 18 May 1815, Philadelphia, Pa. ". . . he is a citizen of the U.S., being the son of Labot Rudolph, an emigrant from Austria on the Rhine, who was nat. (naturalized) in the city of Philadelphia, Pa. on or about the year 1805, before I was 21 years of age"; Emigrated with father and mother in 1801. Aff. (affidavits) Morgan Rudolph, Charles Benson, Wm. Simmons, Archibald Rader. (p. 11)
>
> No. 524 BOWERING, William C., Clackamas Co; b. 1811/6, England; Arr. Ore. 10 Sept. 1852; SC 16 June 1854; m Isabel Amsley, Oct 1838, Onondaga Co, N.Y. His father, Joseph Bowering, was Nat. while Wm. was a minor, at Philadelphia, Pa. Wm. Bowering later applied for cit. in Washington Co, Ore. T. 11 Sept. 1854 and it was awarded 23 Oct. 1857, Portland, Ore. T. One doc. states he was single on 25 Aug 1858. Paper dated 10 Aug. 1870, Isabel Bowering swears Wm. C. Bowering is dead. Stating he left Ore. in 1859 for Cal. and he d. soon after at Stockton, Cal. She states she m him 24 Oct. 1833, Manlius, Onondaga Co, N.Y. She probably never came west, but received land while residing at Plainfield, Ill. Aff: Thomas Kelly, V. W. Schaeffer, J. H. Friendly, James B. Stephens. (p. 21)
>
> No. 1400 KELLOGG, Jason, Clackamas Co; b. 11 Oct. 1832, Upper Canada; Arr. Ore. "emigrated to Ore. Terr. 1848"; SC 20 Aug. 1853. He states he is "free born American Cit. born of American parents in the British Province of Upper

WALTER S. BERRYESSA

Canada, while his parents were temporarily in said province and that his parents returned with him to the U. S. at the age of 2½ years where he has resided continuously." Boundary adj. with Orrin Kellogg 17 Nov. 1853. aff: Oren Kellogg, Elisha Kellogg, Daniel Hathaway. (p. 56)

Land Grants in California. My good friend and fellow soldier in the Canadian Army, World War I, Walter S. Berreyssa, 415-4th Street, Ogden, Utah, graciously permitted our Genealogical Society to microfilm his family papers of land grants, numerous deeds, newspaper articles and historical notices relating to members of his family. It is entitled on the film "The Berreyessa Family (F. F. H. 421), From the Province of Sinaloa, Mexico and from the Counties of Sonoma and Santa Clara, California. Original documents, papers and letters."

He is the son of Frank Joseph Berryessa, who was the son of Jose de los Santos Berryessa (b. 6 Aug. 1817) and Francisca Ignatia Martinez. Jose's father was Jose de los Reyes Berreyessa (b. 1785) and Maria Sarah Bernal. He in turn was the son of Nicholas Antonio Berreyessa or Berrelleza (born 1761) "who came from Spain to Santa Clara. Calif.", the 2nd great-grandfather of Walter Samuel Berryessa.

The opening of a land route from Sonora, Mexico by Anza in 1774 facilitated the occupation of the port of San Francisco. In December, 1774, Anza was ordered to lead a soldier colony from Sonora to occupy the port, and plans were made to establish a mission there. Enlisting some two hundred and fifty persons, Anza assembled them at Tubac and in October set out for California. Descending the Santa Cruz and Gila rivers to the Colorado, thence he followed his former trail to Monterey, where he arrived in March, 1776. In September the Presidio and in October the mission of San Francisco were founded. (*The Colonization of North America,* by Bolton and Marshall, 1921, p. 391.)

THE BERRYESSA FAMILY

By Jose Quintin Ortega

The founders of this family in California came with the Captain Juan Bautista Anza Company in 1776, and were listed

in the roster of this pioneer company which numbered 175 persons — soldiers, settlers and servants. They were recruited in the State of Sonora, Mexico, then a province of Spain. Among them were men, women and children.

Nicholas Berreyessa was a member of the Anza expedition, although only 11 years old at the time, having been born in 1765. "I have arrived at his birthdate by the record of the padron (census) of the soldiers and their wives at the Presidio of San Francisco in 1790. According to this record Nicolas Berreyessa was a soldier living with his wife Maria Gertrudes Peralta at the Presidio of San Francisco, his age at that time 25 years."

He had a sister named Maria Isabel Berreyessa, who was either married or engaged to be married to another member of this party named Juan Jose Peralta. The records of the Anza company list her as single. He was the son of Gabriel Peralta. Later Nicolas Berreyessa married Juan Jose's sister.

It was not till later that lands were distributed to settlers. In 1793 we find them listed in the padron of the Pueblo of San Jose, where I believe they raised their family which later scattered throughout California. "All persons in California by the name of Berreyessa I believe are descended from this one man, as no other Berreyessa is mentioned in the early annals of California.

"This family came into possession of many grants of land in California, but like most all the families of early days they lost all their lands, and in the case of this family some of them even lost their lives in defense of their rights."

The greatest blow sustained by this family was the loss of the mineral rights of the Rancho San Vincente, on whose land was located the famous New Almaden mine and later the Guadalupe mine. These two yielded millions in profits of quicksilver ore.

This family did not receive any land grants from the Spanish Government. All the grants were issued by the Mexican Government as follows:—

Rancho Milpitas to Nicholas Berreyessa in 1834.

Rancho San Vicente (4438 acres) to Jose de los Reyes Berreyessa in 1842.

Rancho Las Putas (35515,82 acres) jointly to Sixto and Jose de Jesus Berreyessa in 1843.

Rancho Malacomes or Moristal (17742 acres) to Jose de los Santos Berreyessa in 1843.

Rancho Sena de Malacomes to Jose de los Santos Berreyessa in 1843.

Rancho Capay jointly to Francisco and Nemesio Berreyessa in 1846.
Rancho Rincon de Muscalon to Francisco Berreyessa in 1846.
Rancho Chiniles to Jose Ignacio Berreyessa in 1846.

Victims of Violence and Persecution. Nicolas Antonio Berryessa, born in Sinaloa in 1761 wrote his name Berrelleza. He enlisted in the San Francisco company October 1, 1782, "His son, Jose de los Reyes, born in Santa Clara, January 6, 1785, was one of the first victims of the war of conquest. He was a retired sergeant with thirty-seven years' service to his credit. He was killed June 28, 1846 by Fremont's men as he landed from a boat at San Rafael on his way to Sonoma to visit his son who was alcalde of that place. . . . Jose Reyes Berreyessa was owner of the land on which the New Almaden quicksilver mines were situated." (*The Beginnings of San Francisco,* by Zoeth Skinner Eldredge, Vol. 1, pp. 304-305.)

On January 2 1846 Jose Reyes Berreyessa, retired Sergeant of the permanent Militia of San Francisco served public notice of having discovered an abundant copper vein, and made application for it to be granted to him.

One account says he was Secretary of the San Jose Ayuntamento 1831-1835, and in 1842 Governor Alvarado granted him Rancho San Vicente on which New Almaden's quicksilver was discovered three years later. "He was killed at San Rafael by Kit Carson at the order of Fremont, during the Bear Flag trouble of 1846." Another statement is that in "June 1846, while on his way to visit his son at Sonoma, the old man was murdered at S. Rafael by Fremont's men."

Still another relates that several scouts in charge of Kit Carson arrested Jose Berreyessa and two companions (his nephews) as the three men landed from a boat, having come from San Francisco. The party shot the prisoners." (Tom Gregory: *History of Sonoma County,* Calif., 1911, pp. 87-88.)

A communication from the California State Library, bearing the title, "A Sketch of the Berreyessa Family," gives this harrowing account:

"The Berreyessa family is among the oldest and most numerous, and was at one time among the wealthiest, native Californians. They numbered their possessions by hundreds of leagues of the finest land, wooded hills, verdant plains, and cultivated valleys. Their horses and cattle and sheep ran wild over the hills, and their value was scarcely counted.

"But of late years a series of misfortunes have overtaken the family. The settlement of the country by Americans has been the commencement of their downfall. . . . The following is a sketch of the persecutions to which a portion of the Berreyessa family have been subjected, as told by J. Santos Berreyessa, (grandfather of Walter S.) a brother of Encarnacion and Nemesio:

> In July, 1853, the corpse of an American was found on the ranch of San Vicente, at that time the residence of six of my brothers, each of whom owned a separate portion of land and lived there with their separate families. The body was found within a league of my brother's house, and was made an occasion of suspicion against him; persecution followed; a party was organized in Santa Clara and they attacked, at night, the house of my brothers, and, seizing them, made them undergo the most inhuman treatment.
>
> In order to discover who was the assassin of the person whose remains were found, the party took my brother Encarnacion Berreyessa, from his house, at night, from the side of his wife and children, and suspended him by the neck to a tree, and lowered and raised him, in order to make him disclose the name of the assassins. Tired of the effort to produce a confession of a matter of which he knew nothing, they left him nearly dead.
>
> Shortly after this, at night, the party of vigilantes, disappointed in their previous efforts, went to the house of Nemesio Berreyessa, and on demanding admittance, they seized him, and a band of fourteen armed and disguised men forced him from the presence of his wife and children who clung around him with frantic cries.
>
> When the news was spread, the mother, accompanied by her children, went to San Jose to invoke the protection of the laws, and ask an investigation of the charges against her son. The Sheriff and his posse, and the friends of the family, made every effort, but the whereabouts of the kidnapped man could not be found.
>
> On the following day, July 22nd, the body of Nemesio was found, his hands and feet tied and his dead body hung by the

neck from a tree. A host of persons, who had heard of the circumstances of the finding of the dead American, declared Nemesio to be above any suspicion in regard to it, and no one came forward to accuse him of it.

The outrages obliged my remaining brothers to leave their houses and families until the thirst of vengeance against them should pass away; some went to the southern part of the State and one to Mexico.

Encarnacion, who was assassinated at San Benaventura, was the same man who had previously been nearly killed by the hanging at Santa Clara. After his ill-treatment he left Santa Clara, and went to Martinez, where he lived eight months, and then went to San Benaventura. The committee which organized in Los Angeles, to punish the band of robbers who had infested that country in 1857, and a portion of the committee aware of the event which had occurred in Santa Clara, in 1854, seized Encarnacion, on a bare suspicion, and hanged him.

"Thus, one after another, the members of the family have been persecuted by a mob, or visited by the strong arm of the law, until there exists but a remnant of them, and these are almost outcasts, bereft of houses and lands, and possessing scarcely the thousandth part of their once princely heritage." (From S. F. *Alta California,* May 31, 1859, p. 1 c. 6.)

There is a little community named Berryessa, about four miles north of San Jose, at the intersection of Capitol Avenue and Berryessa Road. There is also a Berryessa Lane, all these as a testimony of the prominence of this family in early days. (*Historic Names, Persons and Places in Santa Clara County,* 1948, p. 7.)

It is gratifying that so many land records and indentures have been preserved, along with this historical data, and Walter S. Berryessa is industriously engaged, as their descendant, in piecing together a connected genealogy of the Berryessa family, from the evidences that remain.

Chapter 14 •

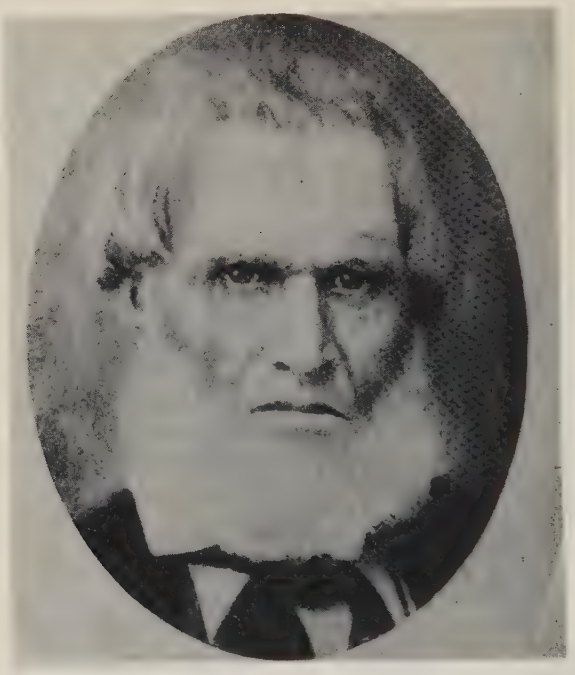
ESTABLISHING THE LOCATION OF FAMILY HOMES

Especially for western families there is an insistent need, if genealogical success it to be attained, to ascertain with accuracy the location of the earlier eastern home of the family. Back East is far too general an area to enable one to proceed without an utter waste of time. Any statement of a progenitor or one of his relatives, any place at the heading of a letter from an eastern relative, and any former place of residence mentioned in a deed is of inestimable value in guiding one to the necessary place.

So essential is this definite locality that it is worth while to take note of those records which help most in providing this information.

Typical Records Which Aid. It is wise always to consult first *family sources.* Perhaps the pioneer ancestor to your locality preserved in writing exactly where he was born, to what places he migrated, where he was married, and in what places, town or county, his children were born. If not, perhaps others of his descendants may have that important information. There may be family records, Bible records and even printed genealogies prepared by relatives.

Another rapid way of ascertaining records kept by kinsmen is to consult the files of the Church Records Archives and the Temple Records Index Bureau at the Genealogical Society in Salt Lake City. The first contains several million family group records and pedigree charts, aphabetically arranged; and the second has about nineteen million cards in the same arrangement. These may promptly place you in contact with kinsmen, more or less distant cousins, who will eagerly exchange family data with you.



CAPT. JEFFERSON HUNT OF THE MORMON BATTALION

You may obtain help in locating family homes, not only from *relatives* or from the *Archives* of the Genealogical Society, but also from *deeds, court records, census records* which at least give the state where born, descriptions of land in *land grants, cemetery records, church records, histories of towns or counties, vital records,* and a variety of other sources.

Location Given in a Deed. Captain Jefferson Hunt of the Mormon Battalion and a pioneer in Edwards County, Illinois, Utah, California and Idaho, was proved by his own statement and the will of his father, to be a son of John Hunt and Martha Jenkins, and was born in Bracken County, Kentucky. A deed on record in that county proved that John Hunt, the father, and Martha his wife had previously owned property in Spartanburg and Greenville Counties, South Carolina, and that John had once served as sheriff in Greenville County.

AMANDA BARNES SMITH AND HER DESCENDANTS

The research could then shift to those counties in South Carolina.

A Clue from Vital Records. Amanda Barnes Smith, the heroine of the Haun's Mill massacre in Missouri, has numerous descendants through all these western states and in Canada. In her life story she stated she was born in Becket, Massachusetts, the daughter of Ezekial Barnes and Fanny Johnson, daughter of James Johnson. The Becket Vital Records (Mass. B 5), on pages 11-12 and 42, gave the marriage of her parents there, 28 May 1795, and the births of five children, including that of Amanda, 21 Feb. 1809.

But her father Ezekial Barnes was not born in Becket. The problem was to locate the place of his birth. Among the marriages was listed the intention of marriage of Moody Johnson and Hannah Barnes, *of Brookfield, Mass.*, 12 December 1797. Here was a clue to a possible former home. If it should so be that Hannah was a sister or other relative of Ezekial Barnes (who also married a Johnson) then this might indicate that he was from Brookfield, also.

The clue brought good results. Hannah Barnes was born at Brookfield, Mass., 31 October 1773, the daughter or Nathan Barnes and Martha Hayward. Her brother Ezekial Barnes was born there 29 January 1770. *The History of North Brookfield, Mass.*, gave a lengthy sketch of the history of the Barnes family, coming right down from the earliest American ancestor to the family of Nathan Barnes. It stated that his daughter Hannah married ..... Johnson of Becket, and that the son Ezekial Barnes had removed to Becket. (*History of North Brookfield, Mass.* (Mass. N 18), pp. 506-507.) Other lines of his ancestry were recorded in this same town history. The vital records of Becket had given a good clue.

A Query in the D. A. R. Magazine. Recently in perusing the *Magazine of the National Society, Daughters of the American Revolution*, for Sept. 1958, Vol. 92, page 802, my eye was attracted to the following query:

Bell-Bean-McGuire—
Robert Bell mar. Jane Bean in Md., d. Sumner Co., Tenn., 1790, had son William, who mar. Sarah McGuire, dau. of John McGuire and Polly Brandon and d. in Sumner Co., Tenn. Want inf. on Robert Bell and Jane Bean also their ch.; also on John McGuire and w. Polly Brandon. — Mrs. Fred H. Cook, 1115 Harrison Ave., Murfreesboro, Tenn.

This was interesting to me, for these persons named were my own ancestors. Descendants of Robert Bell and Jane Bean had been striving diligently for many years to solve the riddle of their parentage and ancestry, all to no avail. The problem had been exceedingly baffling. One tradition in the family was that they were of Scotch-Irish descent from Pennsylvania. Here was the statement that they were from Maryland. A new clue had come to light.

Information from Relatives. Going back in memory over the years covered by this search, I recalled kinsmen from many different areas who were equally interested in the solution of this persistent problem. There were the Bell families in Rexburg, Idaho, who had paid over the years for an intensive search of all available sources. There were the numerous descendants of William Bell Bennett of Shelby County, Illinois; and the still more prolific posterity of his cousin, Hiram Bell Bennett of Meadow, Utah. One descendant of this latter group was President Edwin S. Dibble of the Glendale Stake in Glendale, California. His daughter Jane had attended my genealogical classes at Brigham Young University. All these were cousins, for my own great-grandmother was Mary Bell, wife of Richard Bennett. Her sister, Elizabeth Bell, had married his brother, William J. Bennett. There are a large group of the progeny of these two sisters in Southern Alberta and in Utah, but up there in Canada, we knew only their names, and nothing more.

Once in Cedar Valley, Utah, I found the marker at the grave of Mary Bennett, alongside that of her son, my grandfather, Bishop Eli Bennett. I asked those standing by, "Whose grave is this?" They answered, "We don't know. We have often wondered who this Mary Bennett was." Suddenly I realized from her date of death, 12 April

1856, that she was his mother, the ancestor of all of us, the pioneer mother who had come with some of her children across the Plains from Illinois to Utah, had buried two of her daughters at stopping places along the way, and also some of her grandchildren. After all she had suffered so faithfully and heroically, all that we now remembered of her was her name, Mary Bell Bennett!

I also found in Provo Cemetery the headstone of her sister, Elizabeth Bell Bennett, the widow of William J. (who had died crossing the Plains).

I determined to know more of their lineage and life stories.

The Ancestry of Alfred Bell. It was known that Mary and Elizabeth had a brother, Alfred Bell, also a Utah pioneer who had made his home in Lehi, Utah. The *History of Lehi* stated that he was an early settler there in 1851 and 1852, was elected in Alderman in 1854 and 1856, and had fought in the War of 1812.

In the Library of our Genealogical Society in Salt Lake City, in a file naming those persons interested in tracing the Bell family, I found that Mae Bell Zundel, of Pullman, Washington, was interested in finding the ancestry of Alfred Bell. A letter was sent her promptly. Her reply disclosed that she was a granddaughter of Alfred Bell. She sent a loose sheet in the handwriting of Alfred Bell, which she had found with some photographs in the home of her mother, Mrs. Louisa A. McClellan Bell, in Logan, Utah. This proved to be a brief sketch of his own life written by Alfred Bell, and it contained this most valuable genealogy:

> William Bell was the second son of Robert Bell and Jane Been, his wife, and was born December 25, 1759. He married Sarah McGuire, who was the daughter of John McGuire and Polly Brandon, and was born in North Carolina, May the 11th, 1768. William Bell and Sarah McGuire were married December 30, 1784. Of the children of William and Sarah there were eight, viz., Jane, Polly or Mary, Robert, John, Betsy or Elizabeth, Alfred, Hiram and Eli.
>
> I, Alfred Bell, being the third son, was born in Rowan County, North Carolina, on the 16th day of August, A.D. 1794. At an early age with my parents I emigrated to Tennessee. There I grew up in farming habits and received a liberal educa-

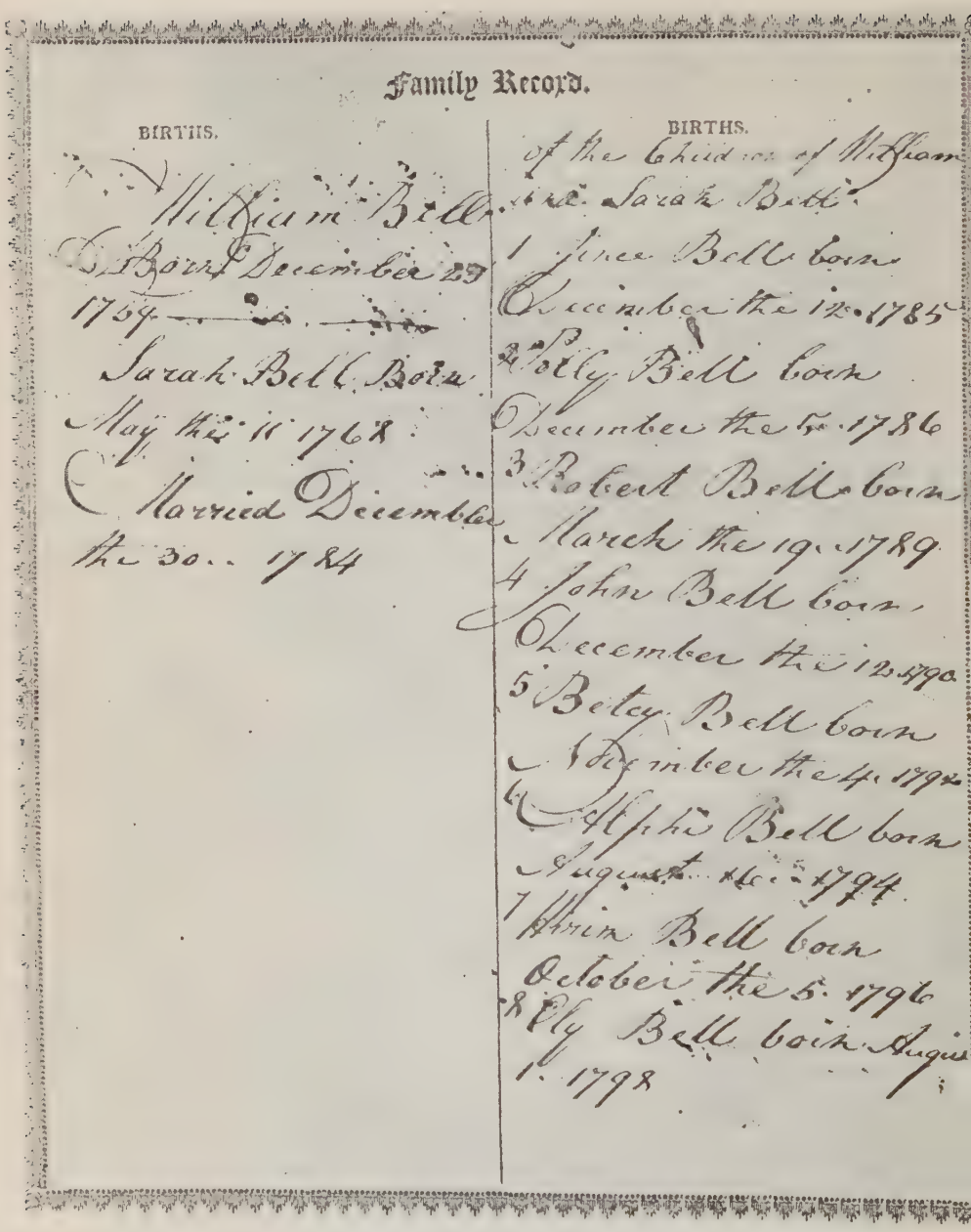
tion. In 1821, July 5th, I married at Gallatin, Tenn., Jane Graham Haynie, who was the daughter of James Haynie and Margaret Graham his wife, who was born Jan. 8, 1802, and departed this life March 16th, 1823. In 1831 I emigrated to Illinois. . . . In 1832 I settled in Shelby Co., Illinois, where I courted and married the widow of David Elder, deceased, by whom she had borne three children, viz., James, Clayborn and Martha Jane. Her (the widow's) name was Martha Louisa Montgomery, the daughter of James Montgomery and Rebecca Clark his wife. By me she bore two sons, namely, William Milton Bell and Eli Bell.

Among the family papers of Loranah Weeks Rodeback, a granddaughter of Mary Bell Bennett, Alfred's sister, was found a loose sheet, evidently in the handwriting of an aged person, struggling heroically to set down known family facts, despite the difficulties of writing and spelling. Included in this family record of William Bell and Sarah McGuire were these births, marriages and deaths:

Births of Children
Jane Bell Born Dec 12 1785
Mary Bell B Dec 5 1786
Robert Bell March 19 1789
John Bell B Dec 12 1790
Betsy Bell Nov 4 1792
Alfred Bell August 16 1794
Hiram Bell Oct 5 1796
Eli Bell Augst 1 1798
Marriges
Jane to Stephen White January 26 184
Mary to Richard Bennett Feb 26 1811
Betsy to Wm Bennett Feb 24 184
Robert to Margaret McGrady June 5 1816
Eli to Sarah Rucker Oct 12 1820
Alfred to Jane G Harney *Junly* 5 1821
Deaths
Hiram Bell July 1 1818
Jane Grayham Bell Feb 18 1823
William Bell June 8 1844
Mary Bennett Bell Aprile 12 1856

The "184" in the first and third marriages should be 1804 and 1814. Mary Bennett Bell should be Mary Bell Bennett. "Harney" should be Haynie.

A Pension Record. Since it was known from the letter of Mae Bell Zundel that William Bell had received a pen-



Family Record.

BIRTHS.

William Bell
Born December 29
1759

Sarah Bell Born
May the 11 1768

Married December
the 30 1784

BIRTHS.

Of the Children of William
and Sarah Bell

1 Jane Bell born
December the 12. 1785

2 Polly Bell born
December the 5. 1786

3 Robert Bell born
March the 19. 1789

4 John Bell born
December the 12. 1790

5 Betsy Bell born
September the 4. 1792

6 Hugh Bell born
August the 5. 1794

7 Alvin Bell born
October the 5. 1796

8 Polly Bell born August
1. 1798

BIBLE RECORD OF WILLIAM BELL AND SARAH McGUIRE

sion for service in the Revolution, a letter was sent to the Bureau of Pensions at Washington, D.C. (now a part of the National Archives), asking for a copy of the data submitted when he applied for a pension. The official reply in part stated:

> I advise you from the papers in the Revolutionary War pension claim, W. 446, it appears that William Bell was born December 25, 1759, in Rowan County, North Carolina. He was allowed pension on his application executed August 18, 1832, while a resident of Sumner County (near Gallatin), Tennessee. He died June 17, 1845. He married December 30, 1784, Sarah, (her maiden name not given) who was born May 11, 1768.

Then followed a detailed list of the births and marriages of the children of William and Sarah Bell, corroborating what was found in the records cited above, except that the daughter Jane was given as "Jinee" and married Stephen White, Jan. 26, 1804, and Betsy married William Bennett, Feb. 24, 1814, and Alfred Bell married Jane *Haynes*, July 5, 1821. The son Robert's wife is called Margaret M. Gready.

Later I examined this pension application personally, and found that after William's death as a pensioner, his widow Sarah had applied for a pension, and to establish her identity as his wife and mother of his children, she had torn from the family Bible the family record. There in the pension envelope reposed the original record as she had sent it in!

The substance of this pension file was printed in *Finding Your Forefathers in America*, along with information from the wills of William Bell and his wife Sarah (pp. 24-27). In Sumner Co. Deed Book 4, p. 186, was a deed to William Bell for a tract of land in Sumner Co., near Cairo. In the deed he is called "William Bell *of the County of Rouan and State of North Carolina.*"

Finding Other Relatives through the D.A.R. A search of the indexes to the *Lineage Books* of the Daughters of the American Revolution showed that in volume 50, pages 124-125, was the record of persons joining that Society as descendants of a William Bell. The actual record found was as follows:

MRS. KATHERINE MILLER BELL PAYNE—49284
Born in in Weatherford, Texas.
Descendant of William Bell, of North Carolina.
Daughter of Robert Eagleton Bell and Margaret Isabelle Leach, his wife.
Granddaughter of Robert Bell and Margaret McGready, his wife.
Gr-granddaughter of William Bell and Sarah McGuir, his wife.
William Bell (1759-1845) served as a private from North Carolina during the Revolution. He died in Gallatin, Tenn. (p. 124)

MRS. MARY LOU BELL MILLER—49285
Born in Dallas, Texas.
Wife of Richard Williams Miller.
Descendant of William Bell.
Daughter of Robert Eagleton Bell and Margaret Isabell Leach, his wife. See No. 49284. (p. 125)

The address of the second applicant was secured from the D.A.R. and a letter was sent to her, requesting that she fill in family group forms for each family in her lineage, from herself back to our common ancestor William Bell. She graciously sent these records for three generations. In this way we were able to exchange genealogical data with our Texas cousin, and to secure the location of their homes.

Will of Robert Bell in Rowan County. In Olds: *Abstracts of North Carolina Wills,* under Rowan County (where William Bell, son of Robert Bell and Jane Bean, had said he was born) was found this very brief abstract of Robert Bell's will: "1784 BELL, ROBERT — Isabel, Andrew, Wm., Jean, Hannah, Agnes; Beard, Thomas." Since William in his pension application had declared that he had a brother Andrew Bell, this appeared to be the will of William's father.

A microfilm copy of Robert's will is now in our Genealogical Library.

16 day of June 1784 I Robert Bell of the County of Roan being very sick and weak in body . . . To Isabel my dearly beloved wife ⅓ of moveable goods. To son Andrew Bell 150 acres of Land lying along Samuel Luckey's line. Likewise to my beloved son William I give and bequeath the remaining two

hundred acres of deeded land and three hundred acres of entered land. To my beloved daughter Jean Bell 40 pounds current money. To my beloved daughter Hannah 5 pounds. Remainder to be divided equally between my son William and daughters Jean and Agness. Wife Isabel and children William, Jean and Agness to have equal benefits of sd wench (Sall). Executors wife Isabel, son William and son-in-law Thomas Beard.

ROBERT BELL
(Book B, 1784)

Located by a Deed. The elder son Andrew was long a missing son. He also had served in the Revolution, according to a statement made by William Bell in his pension application. But he disappeared from the records of Rowan County. Where had he gone?

In Deed Book 13, pags 857 and 858, Rowan County, was a deed which answered this question:

This Indenture made this 16th day of September A.D. 1788 between Andrew Bell *of Wilks County & State of Georgia* farmer of the one part and William Bell of the County of Rowan & State of North Carolina of the other part Witnesseth that the said Andrew Bell for and in consideration of the sum of one hundred pounds Lawful money in the State aforesaid to him in hand paid by the said William Bell . . . doth fully and Clearly Give, Grant . . . to him the said William Bell his heirs and assigns forever that piece or parcel of Land lying & being in Rowan County & State of North Carolina on the Waters of Hunting Creek part of the Survey the said Wm Bell now lives on (bounds given).

Signed Seal & delivered
in the presence of
(John Mc guier ANDw BELL
(Mary Mc guire

Rowan County, February Session 1795. I certify that the within deed was duly proven in open court, recorded accordingly and ordered to be registered.

A. O. Osborn.

Andrew Bell does appear in the printed court records of Wilkes County, Georgia. Later an Andrew Bell, who may be the brother of William, appears in the records of Butler County, Kentucky.

Clues Leading to Pennsylvania. It appeared possible that Robert Bell, the father of Andrew and William, was

the son of Thomas Bell of Rowan County, who was in that locality as early as 1752, even before Rowan County was organized. No indication was found as to where either Robert or Thomas came from. One possibility was Maryland. Numerous records of Bells and Bealls in that state were searched out and copied, with no family connection being established. Virginia records did not seem to help. The surname of Bell is exceedingly common, and persons of that name may be found almost everywhere you look.

There was the old family tradition that our Bell family was of Scotch-Irish descent, and some had concluded it had come from Pennsylvania, like many another Scotch-Irish family of Rowan County. So an investigation was made of Pennsylvania records. Encouraging coincidences of given names were found.

One Thomas Bell was reported to have come to settle in Pennsylvania about the year 1700. "He was the son of John Bell and Mary Macauley, of the parish of Castlegore, County Tyrone, Ireland; and had brothers Robert and Roland." A Thomas Bell settled near old Hanover church in Pennsylvania, and had sons Thomas, Jr. and William. The latter owned a tract of land called "Bell's Increase," in Paxtang in Lancaster County, and had sons John, George, *William,* Arthur, *Thomas* and *Andrew,* and daughters *Jean,* Sarah, Mary, Darcus and Margaret. (Lancaster Co. Will Book D, Vol. 1, p. 391.) Walter Bell of Paxtang died in 1761, leaving a wife Elizabeth and children: *Robert,* James, Walter, John, Ann, *Andrew,* George, Elizabeth, Samuel and Rose. His son *Andrew Bell* died prior to 1761, leaving children, including a son Joseph. The will of Walter Bell of May Town, Lancaster Co., Pa., 21 Apr. 1795, names his brothers John and James Bell and also bequeaths to "James Bell son of *my brother William Bell*"; and to "Walter Bell son of my brother John Bell." A codicil mentions "my nephew Thomas Bell son of my Brother Thomas Bell of Bucks County." (*Ibid.,* Book G, Vol. 1, pp. 222-225.) (See Egle: *Notes and Queries,* 2nd series, 1895, Vol. II, pp. 372-373.)

Now certainly persons named Walter Bell, James Bell, John Bell, Thomas Bell, William Bell and Andrew Bell

appeared of record early in Rowan County, North Carolina. The prospect seemed good to make an intensive searching of Pennsylvania records.

Married in Maryland? Just at this point in the lengthy search came the query in the D.A.R. Magazine from Mrs. Fred H. Cook, already quoted, which said that "Robert Bell mar. Jane Bean in Md." There was a clear indication of another state that should be searched. This statement should be investigated, for it might provide the location of the former home of the Bell family.

In the delightful exchange of letters with Mrs. Cook which ensued, it developed that she was a great-granddaughter of William Bell and Sarah McGuire, through their daughter Jane who married Stephen White. She sent a wealth of data on this branch, hitherto entirely unknown to us. "My authority for Wm. Bell being born in Maryland is from old letters and a Bible record belonging to Jane Bean."

> Jane's Bible record reads as follows: William Bell, *a native of Maryland,* who fought in the battle of Cowpens and engagements in the Carolinas, etc., remained in Rowan Co. after the Rev. and married Sarah McGuire in 1784. He then came to Tenn. It seems that his father had already arrived. John Bell lived on the Robt. Bell homstead. . . . Robt. Bell paid taxes on three different tracts of land as late as 1790. . . .
>
> Where did you get your information that Robt. Bell and son were born in N.C.? That was common gossip that they were from Maryland, and you will have to produce records to go up against Jane's Bible. Mrs. Miller of Weatherford, Texas, now of Fort Worth, also has records which coincide with mine. I am very interested and want to set these records straight.

Opposed to this was the sworn affidavit of William Bell in his pension application that he was born in Rowan County, North Carolina. A copy of this application was sent Mrs. Cook, and also the copy of the will of his father Robert Bell. We asked, if possible, for a photograph of the family Bible of Jane Bean, mother of William Bell and wife of Robert.

She graciously sent a copy. It begins: "William Bell, a native of Maryland." Then follow his dates and those of

his wife as given above, also that of their children. Much interesting historical information on the descendants was also given.

I am inclined to believe, after reading the account, that the Bible belonged to Jane Bell, daughter of William Bell, rather than to his mother Jane Bean Bell.

A New Outlook. Despite the discrepancies, the statements from Mrs. Cook of Murfreesboro, Tennessee, provide a new clue and a new viewpoint. They deserve to be investigated with great care. The records of Maryland will be again studied. So also will those of Pennsylvania. The problem is still to locate the birthplace and parentage of Robert Bell and Jane Bean.

Chapter 15 •

MISSING MAIDEN NAMES OF MOTHERS

An ever-recurring problem in genealogy is to find the maiden names of the wives and mothers in the lineage. Time after time we encounter cases where only their first name is known. Until the woman's surname is found, her ancestry must remain forever untraced. These may be of men and women who are colorful, interesting and admirable in character, but so long as they remain beyond the pale of our knowledge, and undiscovered by us, we can never come to know and venerate their good qualities.

The genealogist must consequently become an adept at finding and filling in on the pedigree chart the missing maiden names of mothers and wives, and those of their progenitors.

Let us examine some cases of how this has been done in the past, that we may learn if possible a successful routine to follow in this highly important endeavor.

The Wives of Two John Snows. Some years ago, in working on the ancestry of the Snow family of Utah, these two baffling entries were encountered in a published article on the "Ancestry or Erastus Snow":

> 2. JOHN[2] SNOW (Richard[1]), b. abt. 1640, m.....; settled at Woburn (Mass.) where he died 25 Nov., 1706. His children were: (etc.)

A more complete search of sources revealed that the wife of this John Snow was MARY GREEN, born 20 Jan. 1644-5, Charlestown, Mass., the daughter of William Green and Hannah Carter (daughter of Thomas Carter and Mary .....). This came from a search of the vital records and wills of nearby towns.

John Snow and Mary Green were the grandparents of another John Snow. Only the first name of his wife was given in the article mentioned.

9. JOHN[4] SNOW (Zerubbabel[3], John[2], Richard[1]) b. 1708, in Woburn, settled in Chesterfield, N.H., ab. 1782. . . His wife was Abigail ....., and she died 6 Mar. 1790, in her 84th year.

The History of the Brigham Family, 1907, by W. I. Tyler Brigham, on page 87, provides the wife's maiden name: Gershom[3] Brigham and Mehitable Warren of Marlboro, Mass., had a daughter Abigail, born 25 Nov. 1708, who married there, 25 March 1729, John Snow of Marlboro. They had a son John born there. The Brigham genealogy adds: "they probably moved away." The John and Abigail Snow of Chesterfield, N.H., had a son John born on this same date.

In this case it was a printed family history and vital records which helped.

Orphans Court and Deed Records. In Chapter 3 of this text is an account of how Jacob Groscost petitioned that "Guardians may be appointed for Magdalena Groscost aged Six years and upwards, and John Groscost aged about five years, his Children To take care of there Estate coming to them from Theobolt Shallas's Estate Dec'd." This would appear to indicate that these children might be descended from Theobolt Shallas.

Then in a deed it is definitely stated that "Daniel Groscast of Mountpleasand in the County of Westmoreland and State of Pennsylvania *intermarried with Susannah one of the Grand Children of Theobalt Shollas deceased.*" Clearly the will of the latter, dated 5 Sept. 1788, should now be consulted. Already this reference has given us the maiden name of the wife of Daniel Groscost. It was a deed that helped this time.

In a second deed quoted we are told that Ann Grosecast deceased, was the daughter of Dominicus Riddle, late of Germany Township, York County, Pa., and that she "had *intermarried with a Certain John Grosecast* to Survive him." This gives us documentary proof of the name of the wife of John Groscost. Search should be made for a will of Dominicus Riddle presumably in York County, Pa. It is not listed in the Index.

The will of Theobalt Shollas of Mountpleasant Township, York Co., 5 Sep. 1778, names wife Madlena, his three married daughters, Shusanah, Ketrin and Madlena, and

> "my Granddaughter Martha Intermarried with Jacob Grosgus; whose share I order to be Divided to and among her Children (York Co. Wills, Book G, pp. 352-354. Proved 31 Dec. 1788.)

A Journal, a Letter and a Church Book. For over twenty years I sought diligently to find the maiden name and parentage of Anna Dorothea ....., wife of Rev. Johann Samuel Schwerdtfeger. They were my 4th great-grandparents. Eventually I succeeded in tracing his ancestry in Germany for three generations. But her identity remained a mystery. The first clue came from the printed Journal of Rev. Henry Melchior Muhlenberg, prominent leader of the Lutherans in Pennsylvania.

> Oct. 20, 1760. Pastor Handschue then read a letter from a young preacher named Schwerdtfeger in which he rebuked us sharply for not having invited him (to a council of pastors and elders). He was married to the daughter of a well-meaning elder in the Lancaster congregation who was present. (Vol. I, p. 450.)

This clue I was glad to follow, listing the name and family of each one of the elders of the Lancaster Lutheran Church in the years preceding and following the year 1760. Some could be eliminated from consideration, but no proof of Anna Dorothea's parentage was found.

On June 19 1948 Dr. Irwin H. DeLong of Lancaster, Pa., wrote a letter in German (translated by Ernst Koehler, photographer for the Genealogical Society), giving interesting facts about her husband, Pastor Schwerdtfeger. Included was this sentence giving the long-sought clue:

> Schwerdtfeger brought certificates from Europe in Latin certified by Dr. Ziegenhagan given him after examination. *He married in New Holland Dorothe Schwab, daughter of an Elder.* He recorded in Latin in the church books the baptism of two of his children.

This information delighted me, and that one sentence solved a problem that had baffled me for twenty years. I was now eager to see the New Holland Lutheran Church

records. They were not easy to obtain. They had been put in the vault of a bank, and could only be examined by permission during regular banking hours. Arrangements were finally made to microfilm them, and a film copy in our Library was soon available for study. There in Latin was the entry which verified her maiden name: (translated)

> (Children) of John Samuel Schwerdtfeger, Minister & his wife Dorothea born Schwab.

From church records and a printed genealogy of the Swope (formerly Schwab) family it was ascertained that her parents were Johannes Schwab and his first wife, Anna Dorothea Lein. (*A Guide for Genealogical Research,* 1951, pp. 122-123.)

Two Queries and an Answer. The Genealogical Society Bulletin for Oct. 1958, published by the Fort Worth (Texas) Genealogical Society, contained two requests for help on the Burgess family.

> BURGESS, CRISS (CHRISTIAN), NEWLAND — Pauline Burgess Cortelyou, 319 S. W. 27th St., Oklahoma City 9, Okla., wants data on the Burgess family living in New York State (or Vermont) about the time of the Revolutionary War. She is interested in John Christian Burgess or JOHN CRISS JOHN BURGESS and wants to know if he married HANNAH NEWLAND. (p.4)
>
> BURGESS, STOCKWELL — Mrs. Beverly B. Brown, 375 W. 2 No., Rigby, Idaho, is searching for information concerning WILLIAM BURGESS, SR., born 20 May 1779 or 1794, at Lake George, Washington Co., New York, who married VIOLET STOCKWELL, d. 1880 in Utah. If anyone can tell her who his parents were, or anything about them, she will be grateful. (p. 5)

Among the descendants of the Burgess family in Utah is preserved this letter and a copy of the family Bible. Willmer Burgess wrote, Mar. 8, 1910, from Hayden, Utah, to his cousin, Geo. Burgess, Lund, White Pine Co., Nevada: "We heard that you wanted the record and here it is as well as we could draw it off. Father gave me the bible and I didn't like to give it up so I copied the record off."

William Burgess Sen. was born May 20th 1794
Vierlaty Burgess his wife was born Oct. 10th 1794
Harrison Burgess their first son was born Sept. 3th 1814
Horace Burgess their second son was born Jan. 23d 1816
Rosina Burgess their first daughter was born Mar. 29 1818
Hiram Burgess the Son of William Burgess Sen. was born May 5 1819
Abram Burgess their third son was born Sep. 3 1820
William Burgess their fourth Son was born Mar. 1 1822
Hannah Burgess their Second daughter was born Feb. 1 1825
Fredrick Burgess their fifth Son was born Feb. 5 1827
Philip Burgess their sixth Son was born Jan. 9 1829
Melangton Burgess their seventh Son was born July 14 1831
Vierlaty Burgess their third daughter was born Feb. 21 1837

Deaths

Hyram Burgess died July 11 1819
Philip Burgess died Oct. 1843
Abram Burgess died Nov. 1846
Horace Burgess died June 17 1849

Marriages

Harrison Burgess was married to Sophia M. Foster July 1 18. .
Horace Burgess was married to Almira Pulsipher
Rosina Burgess was married to George Lyman
Wm. Burgess Jr. was married to Marriah Pulsipher
Hannah Burgess married to Alonz O. Jones
Abram Burgess married to Symahia
Vierlaty Burgess married to Richard C. Gibbons
Melangton W. Burgess was married to Margaretta Jane McIntire Apr. 10 1855

This Bible record gives the birth date of William Sr., as 1794 and not 1779. It does not give the maiden name of his wife, just her first name Vierlaty. We wish now to obtain the parentage of William, his wife's maiden name and the names of her parents.

As they were Church members we consult the Early Church Records File in the Library. Two cards were found for William Burgess. The first said he was born 20 May 1794, Washington Co., New York, the son of *Chrisjan* Burgess and Hannah ..... The second said he was born 20 May 1794, Argyle, Washington Co., New York, son of *Chris John Burgess* and *Hannah Newland*. (The first was from a patriarchal blessing in Nauvoo, 4 Aug. 1845; the second from a High Priest's record at Kirtland,

Ohio, Jan. 1837.) The card for William's wife gave the names of her parents: "Vierlaty Burgess, b. 10 Oct. 1794, Windham Co., Vt., daughter of Abraham *Stockwell* and Vierlaty ....." (This was from her patriarchal blessing in Nauvoo.)

A card for her in the Temple Records Index Bureau names her parents as Abraham Stockwell and Vierlaty Gale.

Nauvoo Baptisms for the Dead. Very fortunately, William Burgess and his wife Violette or Vierlaty Stockwell, were baptized in Nauvoo for their deceased relatives whose names they then knew. These baptism records give William's lineage back to four of his great-grandparents, and his wife's to four of her grandparents.

Name of Dead	Proxy	Relationship	Book & Page
Jonathan Gale	Vierlaty Burgess	gd. dau.	A:68
Lucy Gale	Vierlaty Burgess	gd. dau.	A:68
Jerusha Colby	Vierlaty Burgess	sister	C:61
Abraham Stockwell	Violette Burgess	gd. dau.	C:334
Ashley Stockwell	Violette Burgess	sister	C:334
Violette Stockwell	Violette Burgess	dau.	C:334
Rachael Stockwell	Vierlaty Burgess	gd. dau.	C:336
John C. Burgess	William Burgess	Son	C:33
Anthony Newlan	William Burgess	gd. son	A:114
Patience Newlan	William Burgess	gd. son	A:114
Benjamin Newlan	William Burgess	nephew	A:114
John Newlan	William Burgess	gt. gd. son	A:114
Sarah Newlan	William Burgess	gt. gd. son	A:114
Geduthan Dickson	William Burgess	step-son	A:37
Ezekial Woodard	William Burgess	gt. gd. son	C:402
Sarah Woodard	William Burgess	gt. gd. son	C:402

Study over these relationships and see if you can arrange them on a pedigree chart. William Burgess was the son of Christian (Chrisjan or Chris John) or John C. Burgess and Hannah Newland. Hannah was the daughter of Anthony Newland and Patience Woodard (Woodward). Anthony was the son of John Newland and wife Sarah. Patience was the daughter of Ezekial Woodard (Woodward) and wife Sarah. This leaves us with two Sarahs whose maiden names are to be ascertained.

Vierlaty or Violette Stockwell, wife of William Burgess, was the daughter of Abraham Stockwell and Vierlaty Gale. Abraham was the son of another Abraham Stockwell and wife Rachel. Vierlaty was the daughter of Jonathan Gale and wife Lucy. Now we must find the missing maiden name of Rachel and of Lucy.

A Pedigree in the Archives. On such a pedigree relatives can help. In the Church Records Archives we consult the Index and so locate a pedigree (7 I-934) submitted in January 1934, by May Snow, of Raymond, Alberta, Canada. She was the great-granddaughter of Horace Burgess who married Almira Pulsipher. Horace was the son of William Burgess and "Vilate" Stockwell. This gives dates and places for the above pedigree names, and supplies the coveted maiden names. Rachel, wife of Abraham Stockwell, becomes Rachel Kenney. Six of her progenitors are given. Lucy, wife of Jonathan Gale, is shown as Lucy Temple. Sixteen of Jonathan's ancestors are found on the chart. Best of all, detailed source references are given to vital records of several towns in New England, a town history and a printed family genealogy, from which all these maiden names and family connections were obtained.

Who was John Christian Burgess or Christian Burgess, the father of William? Persistent tradition in the family is that he was a Hessian soldier who came with his countrymen to America to fight against the Americans. He was in sympathy with their cause, and at the first opportunity deserted and joined with them, changing his name from what it was originally to BURGESS.

A "Muster and Size Roll for the Town of North Providence, R. I." lists the discharge from Rhode Island troops of CHRISTIAN BURGESS. But that is another research problem.

Other Clues to Maiden Names. It was a frequent custom to use as a given name for a child the maiden name of the mother. Thus Tarleton Woodson was the son of John Woodson and Judith Tarleton. He married his cousin, Ursula Fleming, and they named a child Fleming

Woodson. Ursula's mother was Susanna Tarleton, and she named a son Tarleton Fleming. Her daughter married a Bates and had a son Fleming Bates. If the given name is quite unusual it may well indicate a maiden name of the mother. Anna Corderoy named a son Corderoy Bernard.

Witnesses to wills, deeds, marriage bonds and church christenings were often relatives. So their names may afford the needed clue to the missing maiden name. Note this baptism record from the records of the Reformed Congregation in Rhinebeck, N. Y.:

DATE	CHILD	PARENTS	SPONSORS
1738, May 11	Hans Jurg	Frederick Berger Margriet Zuvelt	Jurg Zuvelt Catharina Zaam

p. 5

The witnesses, Johann Georg Zuvelt (Zufeld) and Anna Catharina Zaam, were the parents of the mother, Anna Margretha.

A Printed Family Genealogy. My 2nd great-grandfather, Anthony Zufelt, was given in the family record as the son of Adam Zufelt and Nelly *Fraer*. Nothing was found on the Fraer surname. Anthony was baptized in the Albany, N. Y. Dutch Church, as "Theunis, of Adam and Neeltje Zoufeld." (*Year Book of the Holland Society of New York*, 1908, p. 17.) This gave her name as Neeltje instead of Nellie, but did not divulge her maiden name. But in the baptisms recorded there of three others of her children her maiden name is given as Neeltje *Freer*.

With this lead a genealogy of the Freer family was found published in *The New York Genealogical and Biographical Record*, volumes 33 and 34. On page 136 of volume 34 was found a Neeltjen Freer, daughter of Hugo Freer, born in Kingston, N. Y., whose marriage banns were recorded in Rhinebeck, Dec. 31, 1758, to Adam Schufeldt, born at Minisink. This couple were listed in the genealogy with six children, including Theunis (Anthony) as above. Since this genealogy was secondary, the original church records at Rhinebeck were consulted. On page 375 of the Dutch Reformed Church records of Rhinebeck Flatts was found this entry:

Reg. Dec. 31 1758	Adam Schoefelt, Y. M., bo. at Menissink
Marr. by V. H.	Neeltje Freer, Y. D., bo. here — both liv. here.

She was christened at Kingston, Ulster County, N. Y., 13 November 1737, the daughter of Hugo Freer and Maria De Witt. The marriage of the parents is recorded in the Kingston Reformed Dutch Church records, p. 538:

1720, June 3	Hugo Ab. Freer j. m. born in the Pals (New Paltz)	Marytjen de Wit j. d. born in Nieuw-Jork (New York).

Banns registered 1 May 1720.

His grandfather was Hugo Frere, a French Huguenot who fled from France; and his father was Abraham Freer.

In this case a family genealogy guided to original records which proved the maiden name and ancestry of *Nelly Fraer*.

A "Tough" Lineage. The wife of the above mentioned Anthony Zufelt was Bethia Rowley, of New England descent. She was the 2nd great-granddaughter of John Porter and Joanna Gaylord. Joanna's mother was Mary Stebbins, whose parents for years appeared on my pedigree chart as Edward Stebbins and Frances..... Frances died 1673, at Hartford, Hartford Co., Conn. But her maiden name was missing.

In *The American Genealogist*, Oct. 1954, Vol. 30, pp. 193-212, appeared an extremely helpful article by the gifted researcher, John Insley Coddington. It bore the significant title, "The Family of Frances (Tough) (Chester) (Smith) Stebbing Wife of Edward Stebbing, of Hartford, Connecticut." Since Edward was my ancestor I studied this contribution with eager interest. It began:

> Frances Tough was the daughter of Ralph Tough of Burrough (or Burrow)-on-the-Hill, co. Leicester, England, for whom see Part II of the present article, written by Mrs. Florence E. Skillington of Leicester, England. Frances Tough was probably born about 1595-97 at Burrough-on-the-Hill, but since the existing Registers of that parish do not begin until 1612 and there are no Archdeacon's Transcripts for the period, it is not possible to ascertain the date of her baptism. She died at Hartford, Conn., between 12 Nov. 1673 (the date

of the codicil to her will) and 23 Dec. 1673 (the date of the inventory of her estate).

Frances Tough went to London as a young woman, and was married first, at the Church of St. Anne's Blackfriars, London, 26 Nov. 1617, to a fellow-native of Leicestershire, Sampson Chester, citizen and merchant tailor of London. . . .

The Chesters were a "Visitation" family, and their pedigree appears in the *Visitations of Leicestershire*, 1619 (Harleian Society Publications, vol. 2), p. 138. Sampson and Frances (Tough) Chester were living in London at the time this Visitation was taken, and it was recorded therein that Sampson Chester . . . "Duxit (in matrimonium), Fran(ciscam) fil(iam) Rad(ulf)i Tuffe de Burrowe in Com' Leic.," that is, he married Frances the daughter of Ralph Tuffe (Tough) of Burrowe (Burrough) in the County of Leicester. The Visitation pedigree was signed by Sampson's brother John, and can therefore be accepted as proof of Frances (Tough) Chester's parentage. . . .

. . . Sampson Chester evidently died. . . She married second at Bermondsey, 25 Feb. 1627/8, Thomas Smith. Nothing more has been discovered about this man. . . . He must have died at the latest in the early part of 1629.

Frances (Tough) (Chester) Smith married third, probably in 1629, Edward Stebbing. . . .

Edward Stebbing died at Hartford, probably not long before 19 Aug. 1668, when the inventory of his estate was taken. His will is printed verbatim in the *Stebbins Genealogy*, 2:1010-11. . . . The will was dated 24 Aug. 1663, some five years before his death. He bequeathed most of his estate to his wife Frances, for her natural life. The second item in the will is important, for it reads, "I bequeath unto our beloved son John Chester, £40." Generous provision was made for a number of grandchildren, including Joseph, Benjamin, Mary and Joanna Gaylord, who were designated "my son Gayler's children." . . .

The will of Mrs. Frances Stebbing of Hartford, which she signed with a mark FS, was dated 20 May 1670, and is printed verbatim in the *Stebbins Genealogy*, 2:1012-14. . . . She called herself a widow, "aged and weak of body." To her dear and beloved son, Mr. John Chester "now living in or neere unto London in old England, she left the full and just sum" of £24, or, if he were deceased, this sum was bequeathed to his wife and his two sons John and Sampson in equal portions. . . .

From the point of view of genealogical clues, the most significant bequests in both wills were those to Mr. John Chester in England. . . . Edward Stebbing called Mr. John Chester "our son," and Mrs. Frances Stebbing called him

"my dear and beloved son," and mentioned his wife and children only as remainder-portioners. These clues led to the investigation of the Chester family and the discovery of the marriage of Sampson Chester to Frances Tough in London in 1617. Since Mrs. Frances Stebbing had a grandson named Sampson Chester, this led to the unravelling of the whole problem.

The article then traces the posterity of Frances Tough and Edward Stebbing through their daughter Mary Stebbing, wife of Walter Gaylord, through her daughter Joanna Gaylord, born 5 Feb. 1652/3; married at Windsor, Conn., 16 Dec. 1669, John[3] Porter of Windsor. These are my 6th great-grandparents.

Formula for Finding Maiden Names. In this chapter have been utilized as examples vital records, wills, published genealogies, orphan's court and guardianship records, deeds, a journal, a letter, church records, genealogical queries, a Bible record, Nauvoo baptisms for the dead, an Archives pedigree, a family tradition, witnesses to documents and church baptism sponsors, cases of maiden names used as given names for sons and a visitation pedigree. There are still other sources which may provide the missing maiden name.

What is the lesson from all this? Simply that there is no one formula, except to *search all available sources.* One or several of the standard types of records may fail to help, but one of the many may provide the needed clue and the necessary proof. Be thorough in the search, and keep trying until success crowns your efforts.

Chapter 16 •

WHAT HAPPENED TO MISSING SONS

This is a chapter on the vacant chair at the family fireside. Sons grow up and wander away, voluntarily or by pressure of circumstances. It may be wanderlust and the love of adventure which takes them far afield; it may be the seeking of better living conditions; it may be the fortunes of war.

Because of missing sons the genealogist has two baffling problems: to locate the descendants of the distant son so as to make his record of the posterity of the progenitor with whom he started complete; or if he is tracing back the pedigree from that son who took his departure, to find where in the family back East he has his lineal place.

Sometimes the occasion for the disappearance of the son is highly unusual.

Kidnapped by the Indians. John Young was one of the pioneers of Matilda Township, Ontario, Canada, his house being on lot 3, concession 4. One Sunday afternoon in early days Mr. and Mrs. Young left home to make a friendly call on a forest neighbor, expecting to return and find that all was well. Shortly after their departure their little son Michael (commonly called Mickie) grew tired of being alone and started out to join his parents. Arriving at the house where he expected them to be, he peeped through the cracks of the shanty but saw no one. He did not see his parents, so started home again.

Indians often passed through this forest settlement. Some of them chanced to meet the little lad walking alone. The bright, attractive face of Mickie aroused their admiration, and they quickly kidnapped him. You can imagine the excitement of their arrival in camp when they reported they had brought captive "a little white boy."

The Youngs returned home and soon discovered that Mickie was gone. They surmised he had followed them, but where he then was they knew not. A hurried search was vain. The alarm was quickly sounded. People came from the whole neighborhood and united in a search for the lost boy. For days and weeks the anxious quest continued, but absolutely without success. As time wore on the mystery of the child's disappearance deepened. Every possible theory was advanced as to the cause of his disappearance. Some thought he had been devoured by the wild animals of the forest. A little bone was long afterwards found which was thought to belong to the body of a child. The good mother is said to have treasured this bone for long years thinking it was all that remained of her boy.

A year went by with no tidings to cheer the parents. More than a score of years elapsed with no word of him and no clue. Along in the late 60's, about thirty years after Mickie disappeared, some Indians were camping along the river front in the vicinity of Point Iroquois. Among them was noticed a man whose demeanor and features did not coincide with those of the Indians. The Indians used to come to the home of an elderly lady for milk and other food. This one who did not appear to be the typical Indian often came on errands there. The old lady used to eye him closely. At length she told him she did not believe he was really an Indian. She said he bore resemblance to a family named Young, living in Matilda. A storekeeper nearby also told him he had the same impression. But the man continued to live with the Indians, remembering nothing beyond that he had always been with them.

At length Norman Lewis, son of the old lady mentioned, offered to go with him to the Young residence. A Saturday was chosen for the trip, and together they made the journey. As they went the two travelers met an elderly gentleman who had long lived near the Youngs. When Norman asked him if he knew this stranger, he quickly recognized his features as those of the little boy who had disappeared more than thirty years before.

They arrived at the Young residence, and were courteously received. As yet Mrs. Young was unaware of the identity of the stranger.

"Mrs. Young," announced the guide, Norman, "this is your long lost son Mickie!"

The startled mother, by some mark, soon identified her son. What a joyous meeting that was. The news of Mickie's return from captivity quickly spread. Neighbors and friends for miles about through all the surrounding country came to congratulate the parents and Mickie, to talk with him, and to learn of his years spent in camp and wigwam.

He could recall many interesting experiences, but the incident of his capture had vanished from his recollection, owing to his extreme youth at that time. He remembered how the little Indians had been unkind to him, calling him an Irish so and so.

As the years of his new life passed among the white people he often reflected on his unparalleled experience for thirty years among the Indians. He later became a resident of Chicago and accumulated considerable property, and there he continued to reside as late as 1905. (J. Smyth Carter: *The Story of Dundas,* 1905, pp. 23-24.)

Lost Sons as Patriarchs of a Numerous Progeny. What makes the search for a lost son so appealing is the possibility that this one lost person may, when found, prove to be the progenitor of a whole new race of descendants. Numerous cases are on record of an unconnected branch of a family which, by establishing one connection, is effectually linked in with the main family.

It is the story all over again of the boy Joseph who was sold into Egypt, and mourned by his father for years as dead. But that son who was gone was eventually found, to the great joy of his father and brethren, and became the chief ruler and holder of the birthright in his father's house. His descendants today are found among all nations and kindreds.

Just so, in genealogy, you cannot afford to take it for granted that a son who disappears from the home record

died without issue or is irretrievably lost. He may be another Joseph in the family. It is your duty, like that of the shepherd in the Bible with the lost sheep, to go seek after that which is lost *until you find him.* When he is found by diligent and painstaking effort and searching, you can rejoice with your friends and neighbors for you have found the lost son. (See Luke 15:4-6.)

The Case of Abraham Neide. In a *Guide for Genealogical Research,* 1951, pp. 84-85, there are three mentions of Abraham Neide, eldest son of Michael and Ann Neide. On 9 June 1724 Ephraim August Herman of Cecil Co., Maryland, leased part of Bohemia Manor to Michael Neide his heirs and assigns "for and during the Naturall life of his the said Michael's wife Ann Neide and for and during the Naturall life of Abraham and Joseph Neide two sons of the said Michael." When the father, Michael Neide, made his will, 5 Feb. 1749-50, he included this statement: "Item I will and bequeath to my eldest Son Abraham Neide (if living) £5 Maryland Currency." He gave all the residue of his whole estate to his wife Anna, to divide among the children. To the son Joseph was to be given a double portion.

From the expression "(if living)" and the fact that he did not give him a double portion as the eldest son, but gave this to his second son Joseph, we detect something unusual. Apparently Abraham was the "missing son." The account of the executors, the widow Ann and the son Joseph, does name Abraham Neide as one of the representatives among whom division of the property was to be made. But nothing more of Abraham is known in the family. What happened to him? Did he die without issue, or leave behind a numerous posterity?

By chance his name was found as a witness to a deed in Lancaster Co., Pa. So a search was made of the *Index to Wills and Intestate Records of Lancaster County, Pa.* It was found that Abraham *Niedy* died there intestate in 1752 (p. 92). He may have left descendants, for Abraham Nidey, Senior, was in 1786 a soldier in the 10th Battalion of Dauphin County militia. (*Pa. Archives,* 6th series, Vol. III, p. 395.) A further search is justified.

Died Without Issue? Like Joseph of old who went to Egypt and was reported dead by his relatives, so is the story of Thomas Welles of Burmington, Warwick, England. He emigrated to New England with his wife and six children between 20 August 1635 and 5 April 1636, leaving property in Burmington. A dispute subsequently arose as to the rightful ownership of this property, and the case was tried in the Chancery Court. The chancery proceedings recorded some interesting pleadings by those involved and their witnesses.

In 1648 John Wells of Tidmington, Worcester, a nephew of Thomas, being son of his brother Robert, alleged that his grandfather Robert Wells had two sons. The elder son was Robert Wells, father of John, and the younger was the said Thomas Wells. In 1608 this grandfather Robert and his son Robert "for the better maintenance and livelihood of the said Thomas," settled upon him this Burmington property for his lifetime, after which it was to revert to the heirs of Robert, elder brother of Thomas. The grandfather Robert had since died in 1619, and his son Robert (father of John) about 1628. Thomas Wells, uncle to John the complainant, 12 years ago (1636) "having a desire to travel beyond the seas," left to his nephew John Wells, this property as security for a debt owed him; and after the death of Thomas, it was to belong to his nephew John, the complainant. It was further declared by John that

> Thomas Wells took his voyage to sea and took with him two sons and one daughter, which are long since dead, and Thomas Wells surviving (all his children being dead) about five years since died also, without any issue living at the time of his decrease.

So of right, the testimony continued, the said lands after his death descended to John Wells the complainant. But now George Neale, Giles Tomes and Richard Samon have confederated together to disinherit him and his son from these lands, and claim to have possession of a deed to them, and to have purchased this property from Thomas Wells himself.

The above named defendants on 15 November 1648 made answer. They said that Robert Wells, grandfather

of John and father of Thomas, did own this property in Burmington. He and his wife Alice and his eldest son Robert, by a deed dated 5 July 1615,

> in consideration of a marriage then shortly to be solemnized between Thomas Wells, his second son, and Alice Tomes, one of the daughters of John Tomes, did then deed to Thomas Wells during his natural life, and after the death for the use of Alice, his intended wife, and after her death to their heirs, the said property.

This deed had been signed by Robert the father and Alice his wife, and by their son Robert and his wife Johan. They knew of no deed ever made by Thomas Wells conveying this property to his nephew John.

> Thomas Wells, and Alice his wife, having divers children sold this property 20 August 1635, acknowledged the deed or fine 31 January 1637, and in the five-party deed of 10 May, 1638, this property was delivered into the possession of the defendants in this action.
>
> Robert, the grandfather, and Robert, the father, did die about the time set forth. Thomas Wells is yet living and has divers children and grandchildren yet living in New England. Letters have lately come from them to friends in England.

Nicholas Hunt of Burmington, aged about 85 years, was one of the witnesses. He stated that about 15 years ago (1636) Thomas Wells, the uncle of John, went from England to parts beyond the seas to New England. He had at that time 3 sons and 3 daughters, all of which he took along with him, and his three sons were called by the names of John, the eldest son, Thomas, the second, and Samuel, the third son, and the daughters were called by the names of Mary, Anne, and the other he doth not remember. He has heard that he now has one other son, born since he went over thither. He believes the eldest child (John) was about 13 years when he went away. He has had several letters from Thomas Wells, the last received being dated 4 Feb. 1647; and one John Robins, who married the sister of John Wells, the complainant, brought the letter, and said that when he came thence, Thomas Wells and all his children were alive and well.

Richard Hunt testified that the third daughter's name was Sara. He believed the eldest was then 17 years or thereabouts, and the youngest two years or thereabouts. Thomas Blackborne testified that he was himself a witness to the deed from the two Roberts to Thomas.

Errors Corrected by Legal Evidence. Good came from this false claim of John Wells, the nephew. From the proceedings we learn the names of Thomas Wells' father, grandfather, wife and wife's father. This was really needed.

In the January, 1915, issue of *The Utah Genealogical and Historical Magazine,* vol. 6, pages 1-16, was published "The Wells Family Genealogy," by Junius F. Wells. In it are contained these statements:

> The history is authentic from the first American progenitor, attested by the public records of Connecticut, and that he should have been well born and probably connected with as distinguished a lineage as the name could claim in England and back to the remotest period in which it is known, is no unfair presumption. We shall therefore quote the account given by the author (Albert Welles: *History of the Welles Family*) . . .; merely observing that it is not established by any known records who Governor Thomas Wells' father was, or whether he was connected with the Lincolnshire or Essex or Northumberland lines. . . .
>
> "Governor Thomas Welles, of Connecticut, a lineal descendant of the Essex branch of the Welles family in England, was born in Essex County, England, in the year 1598. (The offices he held, as Treasurer, Magistrate, Secretary, Deputy-Governor and Governor of the Colony, are then enumerated.) . . .
>
> "Thus, then, stretching over a period of twenty-three years, from his first appearance in the Colony to his decease, we find Thomas Welles perpetually enjoying the confidence of his fellow-citizens, and occupying the highest post in the Colony."

The article then gives this statement: "GOV. THOMAS WELLS, the American ancestor of the family, was born in England, 1598, and died in Wethersfield, Conn., 14 January, 1659-60. He married in England (1) a Miss Hunt and (2) about 1646, Elizabeth Deming, widow of Nathaniel Foote. She died 28 July, 1683." Eight chil-

dren are named, with Anne, born about 1619, as the eldest child, and, in addition to the six children named in the above proceedings, a son Robert, born 1624, and the last child, Joseph, born 1637, after the arrival in America.

In comment on the above statements, we know now that Thomas Wells was the son of Robert Wells and his wife Alice, and was of Burmington, Warwick, and not born in Essex County. He did not marry "a Miss Hunt" but he did marry Alice Tomes, daughter of John Tomes, soon after 5 July 1615. She died in Connecticut, probably not later than 1646.

In the five-party deed already mentioned, between "Thomas Wells of Hartford by the river of Connecticut in New England gent.," and others, "the said Thomas Wells, and Alice his wife" deed the said premises in Burmington to George Neale, Nicholas Hunt and Giles Toms, guaranteeing to these buyers the peaceable possession of the premises described. (See "The English Ancestry of Gov. Thomas Welles of Connecticut," by Lemuel Aiken Welles, in *The New England Historical and Genealogical Register,* July 1926, vol. 80, pages 279-305.)

Thus he who was declared to have died without surviving issue actually became a noted Governor and left a numerous multitude of descendants. President and General Daniel H. Wells and his son Governor Heber M. Wells of Utah were from his eldest son John Wells; and President Wilford Woodruff and all his posterity are derived from his eldest daughter Anne Wells.

The Problem of Jonathan Mead — The History and Genealogy of the Mead Family, 1901, by Spencer P. Mead. said that Jonathan Mead, son of John[3] Mead, was born about 1684, never married, and died in 1712 (p. 211). This left various important lines descended from him unconnected, including thousands in Utah.

> In the summer of 1915 Spencer P. Mead re-examined the Greenwich (Conn.) records and found positive proof that Jonathan[4] (John[3], John[2], William[1]) did not die in 1712 but married Esther Butler, had the seven children whose names

appear in the following pages and removed to Nine Partners, Dutchess Co., N.Y. (*Genealogy of a Branch of the Mead Family,* by Lucius Egbert Weaver, 1917, pp. 3, 22.)

So a new genealogy was printed to give this missing branch of the family. Jonathan married 7 Dec. 1713, and moved with his family from Greenwich, Conn., to Dutchess Co., N.Y. He was a cooper by trade and was always known as "Jonathan the Cooper" to distinguish him from his cousin Jonathan, Jr. He had a son Enos Mead, born 17 Nov. 1720, of Charlotte Precinct, Dutchess Co., whose will, dated 19 Dec. 1774, names wife Melasen and son Gideon. Gideon's will has also been obtained. His daughter Abigail Mead married Daniel McBride. She was a Utah pioneer and is represented today by numerous descendants.

Located by Deeds and Census Records. In the Bennett family of Illinois and Utah they preserved an account of William Bennett and Catherine Barnett having three sons, Elisha, Richard and William J. The two latter moved to Shelby County, Illinois; Elisha "went to Kentucky." Nothing more was known of him or his posterity. He was another missing son.

An intensive search was made of the records of Prince Edward County, Va., where he first married. He was born about 1778, probably in Cumberland County, Va. This bond of his first marriage is on file in Prince Edward County:

> 20 Nov. 1797. Elisha Bennett and Lucy Cason, daughter of Seth Cason, who gives written consent. William Bennett, father of Elisha, gives written consent for his son to marry. Philip Chapman, security.

On 28 April 1800 Elisha Bennett of Prince Edward County bought at public auction the home lot of his deceased father-in-law, and his mill, 135¼ acres. (Deed Book II, p. 411.) He sold his home lot in 1806, as evidenced by this deed:

> Indenture 15 Sept. 1806, between Elisha Bennett & Lucy his wife of Prince Edward County & James Plant of the same county, for £182 5s 135 acres in Prince Edward County, on

the south side of Vaughan's Creek (bounds given). Signed by Elisha Bennett and by Lucy Bennett by mark. (Deed Book 13, p. 596.)

Soon thereafter he removed to Kentucky. The problem was to find in what county he made his home. His father, brothers and sisters made their home in Sumner County, Tennessee.

He served as one of the executors of his father's will in May, 1823, by which he received eighty acres in Sumner County. This he sold that same month to his brother-in-law, James Vinson.

Elisha Bennett to James Vinson, deed for 80 acres of Land, 20 May 1823, between Elisha Bennett of the State of Kentucky, & *County of Butler,* and James Vinson of the county of Sumner & State of Tennessee; sd. Bennett sells for $750 a tract of land lately in possession of William Bennett, dec'd., which descended to the heirs of said Bennett; sd. Elisha is one of the heirs at law of sd. Wm. Bennett, entitled to 80 acres. Lot No. 1 Beginning at North west corner, etc. (Sumner Co. Deed Book 10, p. 274.)

In this deed he was called of Butler Co., Ky. So a letter was sent for a search by the County Clerk of Butler County. He replied 11 Feb. 1935, stating: "Our record does not reveal the name of Elisha Bennett in Will Book, Deed Book or Marriage Book. This county was formed in 1810; prior to that time you will likely find the record at Russellville, Logan Co., Ky."

Butler was formed from Logan and Ohio Counties in 1810. Elisha Bennett appears in the 1810 census of Butler County with a wife and a number of children of various ages. So a personal search was made at the courthouse at Morgantown, the county seat of Butler County, September 20, 1950. The name of Elisha Bennett did not appear in the Will Books, as he died intestate. But he does appear in Deed Books and in the Marriages and in the County Court records. In fact, he was early made one of the Justices of the Court, and served in that capacity for a number of years. Note these entries:

Indenture 19 Feb. 1829 between Elisha Bennett of Butler Co. and R. W. Ragland of Warren Co., Ky., for $1200 four negroes and 20 head of cattle, 18 head of sheep, 45 head of

hogs, 3 head of horses, 9 feather beds, articles of furniture, 1 cart and yoke of steers, as security for a loan of $1200, to be paid the first day of January 1831. (Deed Book C, pp. 244-245.)

On 22 Mar. 1838 Elisha Bennett of the County of Butler gave a deed of mortgage to William Dial of the County of Warren, to a negro boy named Alexander, to well and truly pay $390.50 to him before 25 Dec. next. (Deed Book D, pp. 409-410.)

This is the last mention found of him during his lifetime.

14 Oct. 1839, Indenture between John B. Chapman of Butler Co. of the one part and "the heirs of Elisha Bennett & the widow of said Elisha Bennett (so far as it relates to her dower) of the other part, for $400, a tract in Butler Co., on the waters of Gasper. (Deed Book D, pp. 502-503.)

His widow Elizabeth Bennett continued to appear in the census reports of Butler Co., until that of 1860. There are a number of marriages of his children, but these were found in a list put away and not accessible to the public. Climbing a tall ladder and searching carefully among bundles of estate papers, I found the Inventory of the Estate of Elisha Bennett in Nov. 1839; and a Sale Bill of his personal estate, naming Mrs. Elizabeth Bennett, and a number of his children and sons-in-law. There were in all 18 children.

Thus was another missing son located, and the record of his family secured.

Chapter 17 •

CHANGES IN FAMILY SURNAMES

One of the fond illusions of many families is a tenacious belief that their particular surname has always existed in that identical form and spelling from time immemorial. "Our family has always spelled our name this way," they assert with conviction. "We are not related to those families which use a different spelling." This is wilful self-deception.

Actually the spelling and the pronunciation of a surname is one of the most inconstant things imaginable. Virtually every surname in existence has gone through a whole series of changes, until the original name would not even be recognized from that now in current use. It would require a trained imagination to surmise how the surname appeared originally. But the only sure proof of the original surname is to trace the lineage back, generation by generation, noting the variations encountered in the process. This avoids all the perils of speculation and gives record proof of the surprising metamorphosis of surnames.

Surname transformations have come about in a variety of ways. William Henry Drummond, in one of his French Canadian poems, tells of a French-speaking lad from Quebec who went south across the border to seek his fortune in Yankeeland in New England. There, conforming to the prevalent custom, he changed his French name of *Jean Baptiste Trudeau* to its literal English equivalent, and called himself *John B. Waterhole.* (*The Habitant,* p. 28.)

There are cases in Pennsylvania where the German surname "Zimmerman" was changed directly to "Carpenter," and that of "Schneider" to "Taylor," and "Schumacher" to "Shoemaker." Similarly "Goldschmied" became "Goldsmith" and "Silbernagel" reappeared as "Silvernail."

Here is a list of changes in surnames encountered in actual research. This list could of course be added to indefinitely from the experience of others.

Place of Origin	*Early Form of Surname*	*Variant Forms Found*	*Where Changed*
England	Aldred	Aldridge, Aldredge, Aldrich, Allred	Va., N.C.
Scotland	Beall	Beal, Bell	Md.
Germany	Bechtel	Pechtel, Pectol, Pickle	N.Y.
England	Benet (Benedict)	Benett, Bennet, Bennett, Bennetts	Eng.
England	Bernard	Barnard, Barnett	Va.
England	Burdett	Burdick, Burdette	R. I.
Germany	Casselmann	Castleman, Kasselman, Keasselman	Canada
England	Cater	Catter, Kater, Carter	Me.
France	Chevalier	Knight	Me.
England	Cholmondleigh	Chomley, Chumleigh, Chumly	Eng.
Holland	Claeszen	Claesen, Clawson	N.J.
Holland	Couenhoven	Conover	N.J.
Switz.	Dallenbach	Dillabaugh, Dillenbeck, Tillapaugh	N.Y.
Scotland	Colquohoun	Cohoon, Cahoon, Calhoun	N.Y.
England	Eldred	Eldredge, Eldridge	Mass.
France	Frere	Fraer, Frear, Freer, Frayer	N.Y.
Germany	Groskopf	Grosscup, Groscast, Grosscost	Pa.
Germany	Haus	House, Howes	N.Y.
England	Heald	Hale, Heale, Hail, Healle	Mass.
Germany	Herchheimer	Herkimer	N.Y.
England	Holmestede	Olmestede, Olmsted, Olmstead, Umpsted	Eng.
England	Hose	Huse, Hussey	Eng.
England	Kembolde	Kymbolde, Kemball, Kimball	Eng.
England	Lee	Lea, Leigh	Va.
England	Lummyus	Lummys, Lomas, Loomis	Eng.
Scotland	McConnachie	McConkey, McConkie	Pa.
Germany	Marklin	Markle, Merckel, Markley, Merkley	Can.
Germany	Maul	Moul, Mowl	N.Y.
Germany	Messerschmidt	Messersmith, Smith	Utah
England	Neate	Neyte, Neat, Nate	Idaho
Germany	Reiter	Riter, Righter, Writer, Wrighter	Pa.
Germany	Rodenbaugh	Rodebeck, Rodeback	Pa.
England	Royce	Rice	Conn.
England	Rumley	Rumney, Romney	Eng.
Germany	Schaefer	Shaffer, Shaver, Shafer	N.Y.
Germany	Schnebele	Snibely, Snively	Pa.
Germany	Schneider	Snider, Snyder, Taylor	Pa., N.Y.
Germany	Schwerdtfeger	Swortfaguer, Swatfeger, Swatfiger	Can.
England	St. Maur	Seymour, Semore	Eng.
England	St. Clair	Sinclair	Eng.
Germany	Seltenreich	Seldomridge	Pa.
Germany	Streit	Straight	N.Y.
France	Tedter	Tator, Deter, Teeter	N.Y.
Germany	Tietsoort	Tietser, Ditzoor, Ditsoort	N.Y.
Germany	Taillefer	Tolliver	Va.
Germany	Walrad	Walrath	N.Y.
Switz.	Warmuth	Wormuth, Warmouth, Wormwood	N.Y.
England	Wessyngton	Washington	Eng.
England	Wilcoxson	Wilcox	Conn.
Germany	Windrow	Winter, Winters	Mass.
Germany	Wolfahrt	Wolfhardt, Wolfhart	Ger.
England	Woodreve	Woodrove, Woodroffe, Woodruff	Eng.
Germany	Wunderlich	Mirus	Ger.
Germany	Zufeld	Zufelt, Zuvelt, Shufelt	N.Y.

Examples of Known Changes. Some of these transformations call for further comment. The change from Burdett to Burdick would not be at first suspected. So evidences will be given.

Robert Burdett came to Newport, Rhode Island from England in 1651, was admitted a freeman in May, 1655, and was married Nov. 2, 1655. In those days a bitter dispute was on between the large colony of Massachusetts and the tiny colony of Rhode Island as to the possession of a tract of Indian land. This tract had been bought by a group of Rhode Islanders from the Indians, and was known as the "Westerly Purchase." Massachusetts claimed the area was included in their charter, and was part of the district they had organized as "Southertown," now Stonington, Conn. In 1661 Robert was with a party of thirty-six Rhode Islanders who moved into the disputed territory, laid out lots, and began to build houses.

Just as his little home was finished the Massachusetts men came demanding the reason for this intrusion. The Rhode Islanders replied through their leader, Benedict Arnold (ancestor of General Benedict Arnold of the Revolution), that they held themselves to be the rightful owners of the land, and they intended to keep possession of it. Nor would they "try their title anywhere but in Rhode Island, or in England."

Thereupon the Governor of Massachusetts and his General Court sent a Constable armed with a warrant to arrest all Rhode Islanders there as interlopers and bring them to trial. On Nov. 1, 1661, the Constable reported:

> According to the trust committed to me, I have arrested three men, viz: Tobias Saunders, *Robert Burdett,* and Joseph Clarke.
>
> William Palmer, Constable.

On November 14, 1661 Tobias Saunders and Robert Burdett were tried before Governor Endicott and his associates at Boston for forcible entry and intrusion into the bounds of Southertown, in the Pequot country. Tobias made a stout defence that they looked upon those lands to be their right, and therefore they abode upon them.

> Robert Burdett being examined, acknowledged that he was upon the same land, and had built a small house there, upon the lot layed out to him; and that he went upon this designe upon the same grounds as are declared by Tobias Saunders.
>
> Tobias Saunders and Robert Burdett being told that they must give security to the value of one hundred pounds a peece, to answer what should be objected against them at the next General Court, otherwise to bee committeed to prison, they refused to find security and were committed.

They were lodged in prison until the following May, when they were again brought before the General Court and fined 50 pounds each. The authorities of Rhode Island were notified that Tobias Saunders and Robert Burdett had been convicted and confined to prison. After two years of confinement they were exchanged for two Massachusetts officials the Rhode Islanders had taken in retaliation. Eventually the disputed area of Westerly where Robert had built his home was declared to be the rightful possession of Rhode Island. (*Rhode Island Records,* Vol. I, pp. 455-456, 462.)

Westerly was rapidly settled. *Robert Burdick* appears in a list of its free inhabitants in May, 1669. On May 17, 1671 he and others took the oath of allegiance to the king and to the Colony of Rhode Island. Thereafter his surname is always written Burdick. He was the progenitor of "the old Rhode Island Burdick family, which has been identified with the history of the Colony and the Commonwealth, respectively," for three hundred years. (Reynolds: *Hudson and Mohawk Valleys,* Vol. 4, p. 1567.)

A Marvelous Lineage. Mrs. Frederica W. L. Hofer, of the research staff of our Genealogical Society told of an interesting change of surname on the line of her husband's mother, Barbara Mirus. She employed the pastor of Burghaslach, Mittelfranken, Bavaria, to search his church registers to trace the Mirus genealogy as far back as possible.

Despite the illegibile and faded writing in the ancient church books, and, with no index to them, the need for slowly and laboriously deciphering the record page by page, and the necessity of consulting the records of neighboring parishes, he sent valuable information. He had traced the

FREDERICA W. L HOFER AND BARBARA MIRUS HOFER

Mirus family back to one Johann Christian Gottlob Mirus, who died in 1816, at Burghaslach, a ropemaker. The record stated he was born at Altenburg.

In our Library she consulted a history of the Mirus family from Altenburg (*Geschichte des Geschlechtes Mirus, Altenburger Abstammung*), published by Dr. Phil. Leon Mirus. Among them she found a Martin Mirus, a ropemaker. This was probably the one through whom her line came. Further research in Germany proved indeed that Martin the ropemaker was the great-grandfather of Johann Christian Gottlob Mirus, born 1746, died 1816, a ropemaker, who settled in Burghaslach, Mittelfranken, Bavaria. She wrote:

> I learned also of the origin and the meaning of the name Mirus. In the 15th and 16th centuries the custom was quite prevalent among the learned men to Latinize their surnames. Our 7th great-grandfather, August Martin Mirus, the son of Adam Wunderlich, while preparing himself for the ministry, did likewise and changed his name from Wunderlich to Mirus.
>
> The Mirus Lineage brought us:
>
> 1. Urban *Wunderlich,* b. abt. 1550, of Altenburg; md. Anna Wentes.
> 2. Adam *Wunderlich,* b. 1580; md. 5 June 1607, Eva Vierling.
> 3. August Martin *Mirus,* b. 10 Nov. 1609; md. 30 Aug. 1636, Susannah Mandel.
> 4. Martin *Mirus,* b. .....; md. 19 Oct. 1675, Susanne Dorothea Geissler., etc. to the 12th generation.
>
> The motto of the Mirus Coat of Arms reads:
>
> "Der Herr fuhret uns wunderlich."
> (The Lord guides us marvelously.)

The Windrow-Winters Surname. Augusta Winters, wife of President Heber J. Grant, was the granddaughter of Hiram Winters, a Utah pioneer. His wife, Rebecca Burdick, died while crossing the plains in 1852, and over her grave was implanted a part of a wagon tire on which were chiseled the words: "Rebecca Winters, aged 50 years." Tracing back from Hyrum Winters the name was found to change to Winter, and then to *Windrow.*

The *History of Ashburnham, Mass.,* with a Genealogical Register of Asburnham Families (Mass. A 13a), 1887, p. 998, gives this account:

ANDREW WINTER, a German, with wife Mary and two children settled in this town in 1758. The name is written Windrow in the earlier records. He d. Nov. 22, 1792, aged 70; his widow d. March 14, 1814, aged 91.

Confirmation is found in the Ashburnham Vital Records (Mass. A 13). Recorded among the births are those of Philip Henerck, 1754, John, Jacob, Androw, Mary and Margrat, all children of Androw and Mary WINDROW. The seventh child, Kata (Catherine), was listed as Kata WINTER at her birth, July 19 1769; but as Kata WINDROW when baptized, Aug. 13, 1769. This indicates approximately the time of the change in spelling of the family surname. All later marriages and deaths of family members were under the surname WINTER.

Of the sons, Philip Winter died in the army in 1776. John Winter served three years in the Revolution. Jacob Winter was in Capt. Wilder's company in the siege of Boston in 1775; and died a prisoner at Halifax in Nov. 1777. The other son, Andrew Winter, was in the army in 1780, and was subsequently a farmer in Ashburnham and Ashby.

Tendency of Spelling to Follow the Sound. In the 19-million card index of the Temple Records Index Bureau of our Genealogical Society there are abundant examples of wide variation of spelling in any surname. The only feasible way to file all those cards is to place names that sound alike together, with cross references to other spellings of the surname. Thus all forms of the surname Dallenbach are filed together, and cards pointing to the principal spelling are placed under Dillenbeck, Dillabaugh, Tillapaugh, Dilleback, etc.

Special cases are where a foreign name is Americanized to a surname which is the English equivalent, or where the foreign name is legally changed to a simpler spelling of it. In such cases it is difficult to conjecture the original form of the name, without access to the record making the change.

A helpful volume to study in this connection is *Americanization of German Surnames and the Related Process of*

Changes in Europe, by Frederick Walter Hilbig, of our Research Department staff. This is the title of a thesis for Master's Degree at the University of Utah, 1958. It has been termed a scholarly work by reviewers, and contains a wealth of examples of changes.

Surname Changes among Family Descendants. Another interesting phase of the study of surnames in relation to genealogy, is to note the variety of surnames encountered when tracing down the posterity of an ancestor. Here are some notations on the offspring of the famous Bird-Woman, Sacajawea.

On 26 July 1958 I received a letter from Adolph M. Reeder, of Logan, Utah, with this statement:

> Two years ago when we were at Fort Washakie on the Wind River Reservation, I met there a couple, George Twitchell and his wife, whose maiden name was Bernice Burnett Twitchell. This good lady says she is the great-great-granddaughter of Sacajawea. She is a very attractive person and was President of the Relief Society. They are active in the Church.
>
> They say the babe Sacajawea carried on her back while acting as guide for Lewis and Clark became a guide for Col. Cook of the Mormon Battalion; and that he was baptized a member of the Church. The family have been members all the way down. . . .
>
> We expect to follow the Pioneer Trail again through Wyoming this August, and will visit Fort Washakie, and perhaps show them slides of the Lewis and Clark Trail.

This stimulated a reference to my file on Sacajawea, in which appeared this clipping from the Salt Lake Tribune *Home Magazine,* being an article by Bernice Gibbs Anderson:

> The heroine of the Lewis and Clark expedition, Sacajawea, has many splendid descendants in whose minds there is no doubt as to where she may be buried, or which state can rightfully claim her.
>
> Two summers past there came to the Intermountain Summer School at Brigham City, a beautiful, slender, dark-eyed woman and her two lovely daughters. Much time had flown before I discovered that she was a second great-granddaughter of Sacajawea. Her name is Esther Burnett Horne and she lives in Wahpeton, N.D. Like her famous ancestor, she, too, came from near the Shining Mountains and migrated to the Dakotas.

SACAJAWEA AND HER BABY JEAN BAPTISTE CHARBONEAU

Mrs. Horne is descended from Baptiste, son of the famous Bird Woman. Fincelious Burnett, former president of the Wyoming Pioneer Association, was a farmer on the reservation of the Shoshones in the Wind River country in Wyoming, employed by the agency.

He married Baptiste's daughter, and his daughter, Mrs. Millie Burnett Higginson, of Crowheart, Wyo., is the mother of Mrs. Horne.

"Sacajawea went with Charboneau to St. Louis, after her trip with the Lewis and Clark expedition, then they returned to Fort Mandan, North Dakota," said Mrs. Horne. "Here the Bird Woman left Charboneau, supposedly because of ill treatment, and migrated to Comanche City, Okla., where she later married a man known only as 'Jerk Meat,' a transition from the Comanche language.

"After his death she came back to her home in Wyoming. On her way she stopped at Fort Bridger, where she was requested to speak to the Indians, being the first woman ever to address a council. She returned to the Wind River Reservation and joined Baptiste, her son, and Basil, . . . whom she adopted.

"Sacajawea helped Fincelious Burnett to teach the Shoshones to till their land, and to plant and mill wheat for their own use, urging her people to cooperate with the whites. She lived close to Basil for the rest of her life, and when she died at 80 years of age, she was buried at Fork Washakie," Mrs. Horne said.

"Baptiste and Basil were early converts to the L.D.S. Church when the first missionaries were sent to the Indians. My mother lived for a long time in Manila, Utah, on the Utah-Wyoming border. Nearly all the family are still Mormons," commented Mrs. Horne.

In our Index Bureau files are found the names of Toussaint Charboneau, the French interpreter of the Lewis and Clark Expedition; of his wife Sacajawea, who guided that party so faithfully and was of the Shoshone Indian Tribe, dying 9 April 1884; and of their son Jean Baptiste Charboneau, born 11 Feb. 1805, near Bismark, Burleigh, N.D.

All who would have the facts in the lives of these people should study a volume recently placed in our Genealogical Library: *SACAJAWEA, A Guide and Interpreter of the Lewis and Clark Expedition,* with an account of the travels of Toussaint Charbonneau, and of Jean Baptiste, the expedition papoose, by Grace Raymond Hebard, Ph. D. She evidently has devoted many years to an inten-

ESTHER BURNETT HORNE, GREAT-GRANDDAUGHTER OF SACAJAWEA

sive study of all obtainable facts on this absorbing topic, and has presented to the public a scholarly and well-documented history of Sacajawea, of her two marriages and her children and descendants, of the schooling at St. Louis of her son Baptiste as a ward of General Clark of the expedition, of his sojourn for about six years in Germany as the companion of Prince Paul of Wurtemberg, of his return to guide parties in their western journeys, and of his later years, three marriages, and his death at Fort Washakie. The story is also told of Basil, son of Sacajawea's sister. She adopted him as her son when his mother died. He is now buried beside her at Fort Washakie. (See also *The Journal of American History,* Vol. I, 1907, pp. 467-484; and *Finn Burnett, Frontiersman,* by Robert Beebe David, 1937.

In our Archives is a family group record of Shadrack James Large and his wife Maggie Bazil, born 1856, d. 30 Dec. 1923, Fort Washakie, Wyoming, with their twelve children, with complete birth dates, marriages and some

death dates for them. Maggie was the daughter of Basil. The sheet was submitted by Irtense Large Enos, Fort Washakie, Wyo., her granddaughter. An effort is now being made to tabulate a record of all the descendants of Sacajawea and of her two sons, Baptiste and Basil. Baptiste was a popular guide for the Mormon Battalion in 1846.

Virginian Descendants in Brazil. In this enterprise of tracing all descendants of an ancestor one can never suspect what surname changes or strange adventures may have befallen those branches of the family now unknown to you.

A letter came from Miss Lucille Peacock, Librarian of Evans Memorial Library, Aberdeen, Mississippi, dated Nov. 16, 1954. In it she said:

> I am trying to find the parents of Martha Jane Bennett, b. before 1800 in "Va." (where I do not know). Her husband was John Shepherd, b. 1783; d. 1861; and she died 1871, both in Gallatin, Sumner Co., Tenn. Census records show they were born in Va.

Immediately I recognized that this Martha Jane was a sister to my own great-grandfather, Richard Bennett. They were children of William Bennett and Catherine Barnett or Bernard, and born in Prince Edward County, Virginia. I had much on their ancestry, including their descent from Pocahontas, the wills of their parents and of John Shepherd, and the marriage of John Shepherd and Martha Bennett in Sumner County, Tenn., 6 Sept. 1811. Of their descendants I had no record beyond the names of their children mentioned in John's will.

With enthusiasm she supplied an excellent record of their posterity, and some very interesting family experiences. Their daughter, Martha Jane Shepherd, married Edward Saunders Trigg, and had a daughter, Lockie Narcissa Trigg, who married Andrew Johnson Peacock. Their son, Elmo Belmiro Peacock, father of Miss Peacock, was born in Brazil. It came about in this way.

> My Martha Jane Shepherd Trigg had some rather interesting experiences during her life. They lived for some time at Citronelle, Alabama, near Mobile. They had a big nursery there. They were in comfortable circumstances but the Civil

War came along and her husband lost heavily. His numerous slaves "farmed out" to various concerns in Mobile were freed—thereby a total loss to them financially speaking.

Just after the war there were groups of "colonies" as they were called who decided to go to South America to grow cotton and to get away from the *horrible* reconstruction evils. Martha Jane and Edward Saunders Trigg sold out and made their way with their family of boys and girls to New Orleans, from where they were to sail to Brazil.

My own grandfather, Andrew Johnson Peacock, was just out of the army, and was also disgusted with conditions. He too was one who decided to "Go on South" to South America and grow cotton. He made his way to New Orleans.

Well, on the ship going down, a trip of a mere 56 days, why Martha Jane's daughter, Lockie Narcissa, met the young soldier, Andrew Johnson Peacock, and they fell in love. When all were settled in Sao Paulo the two were married. Incidentally, I have some fascinating letters written from them just after the marriage! Then two of my uncles and my father were born there.

The Triggs returned to the U.S.A. first and my grandparents followed in a few years. Aunt Mattie was a teen-age girl at the time so remembered details and later recalled them for me — boat captains, passengers, her schooling in Brazil, her brother's teaching down there, the homeward trip, etc. It all fascinated me and I've written it up as a bit of family history to preserve for younger ones.

When he was a little fellow Dad spent quite a bit of time with his grandparents at Citronelle. He dearly loved Martha Jane S. Trigg. . . . When I was a young girl I visited briefly in the home of my grandmother's brother, where Aunt Mattie spent her last years. They had beautiful old furniture, but whether it came down from the Triggs or the Shepherds I do not know.

In one of her letters Miss Peacock sent me a photograph, made in 1956, of her father and his brother, both born in Sao Paulo, Santa Barbara Province, Brazil. The older now lives in Okeechobee, Florida; while her father resides in Aberdeen, Mississippi, with his daughter Lucille.

New surnames certainly "teach new duties" when it comes to gathering the records and histories of descendants of a common forefather.

CLARENCE FLETCHER PEACOCK AND ELMO BELMIRO PEACOCK

Chapter 18 •

A FAMILY RECORD OF DESCENDANTS

In the field of genealogy there are two chief types of compiled family records. There is the record based primarily on the pedigree chart of an individual, and giving the family groups for every marriage of every progenitor on every line as far back as each has been traced. For this type the usual procedure is to start with the earliest ancestor in point of time, and give the record of his family — the genealogical record — followed by the record evidences and interesting biographical facts about him or his wife and children, other than the child who is the progenitor among them. Then give the record of that child, the progenitor in the next generation, and his family and the record proof and life story materials. This continues on down to the family of the person with whom the pedigree begins. Next, the first lineal ancestor on another line is taken in the same way, giving family by family in the lineal chain until the point where it merges with the first family group connecting it with the first compiled lineage. The same procedure is adopted for each ancestral line, until all are completed as far as possible at the time of the compilation.

The other type of compiled genealogy is the more common. It begins with the earliest known progenitor on a certain lineage, and his genealogical record of him and his immediate family is given, followed by (or preceded by) record proofs and historical and biographical facts. Then a similar record is made of each of his children who married. In sequence follows a like record of the third generation, with a record of each married grandchild. Thence to the posterity in the fourth generation, and so on, as far as the information extends, right down to those living at the present time.

It is obvious that in a very brief time numerous families of a great variety of surnames will be included, because daughters are descendants as much as are the sons, and are entitled to be included in this complete record of the posterity of the particular progenitor chosen. The families of their children, grandchildren, great-grandchildren, and on down to the present are to find place in the compiled record, exactly the same as are those of the sons, grandsons and great-grandsons, etc.

The Many Surnames Included in a Family. Families can increase very rapidly, as indicated in Chapter 1, when speaking of the Petersen family. Girls marry husbands of different surnames. Soon you find yourselves, in compiling a complete record of descendants of your chosen ancestors, of necessity studying the genealogy of families with dozens and dozens of different surnames. Not only must you specialize on those bearing the surname of him with whom the genealogy begins, you must actually become a specialist on the genealogy of numerous other families with other surnames. It is not uncommon, in this record of posterity, soon to have several thousand families to enter in it. Yet as much care must be excercised to make the genealogical record, the source records and documents and appealing historical facts, as complete and correct for each and every family included, as for the original progenitor.

A Simple Method of Recording a Family Genealogy. There are so many different methods of arranging material for this type of record. Some in the past have been confusing to the reader. Some have used numbers to designate each person in the genealogy; sometimes the numbering system has become so involved that it required a supplementary volume to explain it. After the numbers have all been worked out, perhaps a new connection is found, and the whole numbering sequence has been laboriously revised by the author.

It is recommended that the simplest possible method of arrangement be used, avoiding all numbers, except for the pages of the record. Cross references can be made to other pages—from the parents back to where they

appear in the record as children, from the children to the pages where they are given as parents. An example of the Mack family will demonstrate.

STEPHEN MACK, son of Solomon Mack and Lydia Gates (page 10), was born 15 January 1766, at Marlow, Cheshire County, New Hampshire. He died 11 November 1826, at Pontiac, Oakland County, Michigan. He married in 1788 TEMPERANCE BOND. She was born 8 September 1771, at Gilsum, Cheshire County, New Hampshire, the daughter of Stephen Bond and Mary Yemmons. She died in 1856, in Utah, the exact place not yet ascertained.

Children of Stephen Mack and Temperance Bond:

x 1. FANNY, b. 4 Sep. 1789, Gilsum, Cheshire Co., N.H.; d. 1825, Pontiac, Oakland Co., Mich.; unmarried.

x 2. RHODA, b. abt. 1791, of Tunbridge, Orange Co., Vt.; m. 14 Feb. 1813, ASHER BUCKLAND. (page 78)

x 3. MARY (POLLY), b. 4 Sep. 1793, Tunbridge, Orange Co., Vt.; d. before 1841; m. 2 June 1813, DAVID DORT. (page 80)

x 4. RUTH, b. abt. 1794, Tunbridge, Orange Co., Vt.; d. 1857; m. 10 Oct. 1809, BENJAMIN STANLEY. (page 82)

x 5. LOVICA, b. 13 Sep. 1795, Tunbridge, Orange Co., Vt.; m. 24 Dec. 1820, DAVID COOPER. (page 84)

6. LOVINA (twin), b. 13 Sep. 1795, Tunbridge, Orange Co., Vt.; d. 2 Sep. 1823, Pontiac, Oakland Co., Mich.; unm.

x 7. STEPHEN, JR., b. 2 Feb. 1798, Tunbridge, Orange Co., Vt.; d. 10 Apr. 1850, Macktown, Winnebago Co., Ill.; m. 1829, HO-NO-NE-GAH (MARY); m. 1848, MRS. ISABEL DANIELS. (page 86)

x 8. HARRIET, b. 28 May, 1800, Tunbridge, Orange Co., Vt.; d. 2 Sep. 1872, Tawas, Iosco Co., Mich.; m. 26 Aug. 1818, RUFUS HATCH; m. 13 Feb. 1828, GIDEON OLIN WHITTEMORE. (page 96)

9. JOHN MUDGET, b. 4 Dec. 1802, Tunbridge, Orange Co., Vt.; d. after 1850, probably Hamtramck, Wayne Co., Mich.; m. 18 Mar. 1827, MARIA A. KEENY.

x 10. (COL.) ALMON, b. 28 Apr. 1805, Tunbridge, Orange Co., Vt.; d. 20 Jan. 1885, Rochester, Oakland Co., Mich.; m. 27 Mar. 1827, ELVIRA JAMIESON. (page 100)

x 11. ALMIRA (twin,) b. 28 Apr. 1805, Tunbridge, Orange Co., Vt.; d. 12 Mar. 1886, Salt Lake City, Salt Lake Co., Utah; md. 22 Oct. 1836, BENJAMIN COVEY (page 102)

x 12. ACHSAH, b. abt. 1807, Tunbridge, Orange Co., Vt.; d. 6 Jan. 1835, Pontiac, Oakland Co., Mich.; m. 31 July 1831, JOHN RICHARD WHITTEMORE. (page 108)

Achievements of Col. Stephen Mack. Stephen Mack was a man of courage, bold, enterprising and resourceful. He served his country in two wars and left his mark as a leader in pioneer communities. He reared a large and interesting family of twelve children, and his posterity is numerous and worthy.

As a boy of fourteen he enlisted for service in the Revolutionary War, and during a period of three years took part in many battles. He was a merchant and moving westward he had a large store in Detroit, and other stores in Michigan territory and in Ohio.

During the War of 1812 the British and Indians attacked the fort at Detroit, and opened a brisk artillery fire upon it. General Hull, the American commander, weakly ran up the white flag of surrender. At that signal of disgrace the soldiers broke into loud curses against their commander, calling him a traitor and a coward. Officers broke their swords and indignant women shed bitter tears. The anger of Stephen Mack was aroused to the highest pitch. He broke his sword against his knee, and throwing it into the lake, exclaimed that he would never submit to such a disgraceful compromise while the blood of an American continued to run in his veins.

Following this surrender he was carried a prisoner to Canada, because of his popularity and influence with the American troops. Back in Detroit he was active in ransoming captives from the Indians, saving them from torture and certain death.

Still later he became the recognized founder of the city of Pontiac, Michigan, being President of the "Pontiac Company" and the most prominent business man there. He was also a member of the Territorial Legislature. He died suddenly in 1826. Here are excerpts from two obituaries of him:

> November 14, 1826 (Tuesday). Col. Stephen Mack, a soldier of the Revolution, an enterprising and industrious citizen, and a kind and provident father, departed this life

last Saturday morning at Pontiac . . . Col. Mack has for nearly twenty years resided in this Territory, and has been distinguished from the mass of his fellow-citizens for his enterprise and the great utility of his views. It is owing to his exertions more than any other man's, that the first settlers of Oakland county were so soon accommodated with mills and other useful works. His sacrifices and exertions in promoting the best interests of the new county which he had been so eminently useful in settling and organizing endeared him to his fellow citizens, and confiding in his excellent judgment in all matters connected with the welfare of a young community they elected him to the first legislative council of the Territory. His advanced age constantly warned him that he had but a short time to remain with us, yet he stayed not his labors and death found him striving to accomplish objects of the most useful and permanent kind. The loss of such a man is truly that of the public — and many are those who share the grief of the numerous family which he has left. (*The Detroit Gazette.*)

It is regretted that we cannot record the proud incidents of the patriotic and public spirited life which is now terminated on a more durable and appropriate page than general sentiment ascribes to a Weekly Journal. Nevertheless it is highly gratifying and highly proper that we should pay a passing tribute of respect and affection to the memory of this distinguished citizen.

Col. Mack . . . in childhood removed with his parents to the State of New Hampshire, where his father purchased a large tract of land and settled himself as a farmer. He took an early and zealous part in our Revolutionary struggle, and was distinguished for his patriotism and bravery throughout the period of that appalling contest. After the peace he returned to New Hampshire and entered into Mercantile dealings and farming, which with credit and profit to himself he pursued in that State with the enterprise which always distinguished him, until he removed to this city (Detroit) in 1807.

At the memorable surrender of this place in 1812 he was made a prisoner, and on account of the jealousy of his power and influence over the American troops excited in the British officers, was sent to York in the upper Province (of Canada). His natural contempt of danger and suffering, and his uncommonly sturdy powers of mind and body fitted him eminently for the execution of every prospect of enterprise and improvements in this till recently unknown and much misrepresented territory. He may be justly called the founder of Pontiac, the author of the impulse which settled the important County of Oakland.

> In private life Col. Mack was amiable, fulfilling the interesting and hallowed relations of that condition almost exceptionally. The poor always found him their friend, for he gave employment and shelter and food. The community with which he most acted, and was most intimate, at all times felt and acknowledged the kindness, integrity and independence of his whole character — and the aching hearts of his wife and numerous children and grandchildren bear testimony that he was indeed to them a husband and parent. (Copied by D. M. Cooper, Detroit, March 30th, 1843. He was a grandson of Colonel Mack.)

A Pioneer Widow Crosses the Plains. After her husband's death Temperance Bond Mack lived, in 1832, in Pontiac with her married daughter, Harriet Mack Whittemore, whose husband later became Judge and Secretary of State for Michigan. Temperance and her daughter Almira became converts of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, and moved westward with that people. They endured years of persecution, being driven with them from Missouri and Illinois. Miss Verda Hicken kindly permitted me to see a letter Temperance Mack wrote to her daughter Harriet in Michigan just prior to the mother's departure across the Plains to Utah, at the age of 76. She said she was sending Mr. Covey (Benjamin Covey, husband of Almira) to Michigan to obtain from them means and an outfit for the journey.

> In the first place I want you to send me a good wagon, well covered, that I may have it to carry my things and sleep in while traveling, and a good team to draw it. As I expect to go so great a distance from you it is not likely that I shall ever call upon you for anything more, and my object now is to fit out for necessaries as long as I live, or at least for several years, and as the journey is long, I want to make myself as comfortable as I can. . . .
>
> I hope I shall live long enough to see you all yet gather with the Saints, and until that time I want you to remember the words that I have told you concerning the work of God and ponder it in your hearts, for I am going far from you and if you do not come where I am it is not at all likely that we shall ever meet again this side of Eternity.

The Covey family crossed the Plains to Utah in 1848, Temperance probably traveling with them. Benjamin was

ALMIRA MACK COVEY AND HARRIET MACK WHITTEMORE

made bishop of the Twelfth Ward in Salt Lake City. After a faithful life he died in 1868. His widow, Almira, lived until March 10, 1886. To represent them today these stalwart pioneers have a numerous posterity, all of them honored in being descended from noble pioneers. President Royle S. Papworth of the Columbia River Stake, and Lucille J. Covey Richards, wife of Superintendent Lynn S. Richards of the General Superintendency of the Sunday School, are the offspring of Temperance and her daughter Almira. These sentences are from Almira's obituary:

> DEATH OF A VETERAN. Sister Almira Covey, who died at her home in the 12th Ward of this city yesterday, of old age and pneumonia, has been for many years regarded as the oldest living member of the Church, having been baptized in August, 1830, by David Whitmer, and confirmed by Joseph Smith. She was a cousin of the Prophet, her father, Stephen Mack, being a brother of Lucy Smith, the Prophet's mother.
>
> She passed through all the persecutions to which the Church was subjected, and had her home burned by mobs three times. She came to this valley in the year 1848. . . . She was almost 81 years of age. . . . She was a remarkably bright and active woman for her age, being able to attend to many household duties up to last Friday, when she was taken sick, and her mental faculties being unimpaired up to the last.
>
> Before her death she called her posterity to her bedside and charged them to be true to their religion, and left instructions for ordinances in behalf of her dead relatives which she had failed to perform in the Temple, to be attended to by them.
>
> She had filled a consistent life and died without regrets, feeling tranquil in the assurance that she would gain the reward in store for the righteous.
>
> She leaves three sons and twenty-one living grandchildren. (*The Deseret News,* March 17, 1886, Vol. 35, p. 137.)

A Trader among the Indians. There is a fascination about the remarkable career of Almira's brother, Stephen Mack, Jr. His life was filled with unique and interesting experiences among the Indians. The sterling qualities of his character are still remembered and preserved in extant records.

He came with his father's family from Vermont to Detroit in 1822. He had been a student at Dartmouth College. "For some cause," writes one author in the *History*

of Winnebago County, Ill., 1877, p. 233, "he could not reconcile himself to the routine of college life, and, finally, abandoned it without waiting for commencement day."

> His love of adventure was shown early in life. Soon after the war of 1812 he came to Detroit with his father, who held a position under the government. The younger Mack subsequently joined a government expedition around the lakes from Detroit to Green Bay. While there Mack learned from traders that the Rock River country presented favorable opportunity for a trading post. He accordingly made the journey with an Indian pony, and arrived at a point . . . near what is now Beloit. . . .
>
> Having mixed a great deal with the Indians, gradually assimilating to their habits and customs, he at last (1829) married an Indian woman named Ho-no-ne-gah, the daughter of an Indian chief. . . . Some authorities state that Ho-no-ne-gah once saved Mack's life, from the fury of some Winnebagoes whom he had offended, and that out of gratitude he offered Ho-no-ne-gah his hand. . . .
>
> This alliance, however, did not establish a perpetual bond of friendship between Mack and the tribe. He incurred the enmity of the red men when he refused to sell them whiskey and firearms. While (he was) on a trip to Chicago a plan was laid to murder him and take his goods. His faithful Indian wife discovered the plot. She mounted a pony, met him a considerable distance from the camp and gave him warning.
>
> Together they started for the camp of the Winnebagoes at Bird's Grove. There they were made welcome and given protection, and there they made their home. Ho-no-ne-gah, though born of a savage race, exhibited traits of a more refined womanhood. She was a true wife, and thoroughly devoted to her home and children. Her husband's tribute of devotion was sincere. She was modest and disliked to appear conspicuous. She knew the remedies the Great Spirit had spread before her in nature, and with these she visited the sick. The needy were also blessed by her gracious ministry. (*History of Winnebago County,* 1916, Vol. II, pp. 637-638; *History of Winnebago Co.,* 1877, pp. 223-234.)

An interesting incident in his life is his contact with the great warrior chief, Black Hawk, who came with a band of his Sac warriors to the trading post at Bird's Grove, 26 June 1832. A camp of Winnebagoes at the Grove gave Black Hawk entertainment. Stephen Mack had great influence among the Winnebagoes, but their friendship for him was now put to a severe test. Black Hawk attempted

to persuade the warriors of the tribe to accompany him. "Mack opposed this alliance, and thereby incurred the displeasure of the Sac chief. The Winnebagoes remained at their old camp, and Black Hawk proceeded without them." Not long afterwards he was utterly defeated. But the feeling against Stephen Mack during the visit of Black Hawk was so strong that the chief of the Winnebagoes advised him to leave the camp for his safety. He was supplied with food by his wife until the storm had passed. (*Ibid.*)

With keen foresight he discerned that the Rock River valley would be speedily settled when the war with Black Hawk ended. He planted a village which was given the name of Macktown. Soon it became a flourishing settlement. In 1839 he erected a large frame residence. He kept a general store and did a successful business. Goods he brought on Indian ponies from Chicago. He built a ferry and a bridge across Rock River. He held important civic positions. He continued in the fur trade. He owned over a thousand acres of land.

Children of an Indian Wife. Stephen Mack, Jr. had married Ho-no-ne-gah under the Indian form of marriage. To them were born eleven children, two of whom died in infancy. "In order to fully protect the title of his children to his estate, he and his wife were remarried, September 14, 1840, by William Hulin, a justice of the peace." He had already made his will, 4 April 1840, the full text of which is printed in *The History of Rockton,* by Edson I. Carr. By it he made an equal division of his property among his wife and children.

His wife died in 1847, leaving the youngest child, Caroline (Carrie), a babe at her death. This tribute was paid to the mother:

> Ho-no-ne-gah, from all accounts, was an intelligent, thrifty, and industrious woman, neat in appearance and deportment, and very skilful in the use of the needle. She died at Macktown in July, 1847, leaving a child about one year old, now (1919) Mrs. Carrie Mack Newberry, of Pontiac, Michigan. (*Journal of the Illinois State Historical Society,* Vol. 12, pp. 53-57.)

His own death came suddenly on 10 April 1850; and he was buried beside his Indian wife and their son Henry, a few yards from his house.

Children of Stephen Mack, Jr., and Ho-no-ne-gah (Mary):

1. HENRY, b. abt. 1830; d. before 1850, Macktown, Winnebago Co., Ill.; unmarried.
2. MARY F., b. 1832; m. 1870, ISAAC TERRILL.
3. ROSA, b. abt. 1834, Macktown, Winnebago Co., Ill.
4. LOUISA I., b. 1836, Macktown, Winnebago Co., Ill.; d. after 1851.
5. THOMAS, b. 1838, Macktown, Winnebago Co., Ill.; d. after 1850.
6. WILLIAM, b. abt. 1840, Macktown, Winnebago Co., Ill.; d. before 1850, Macktown, Winnebago Co., Ill.; unm.
7. EDWARD, b. 1842, Macktown, Winnebago Co., Ill.; d. after 1850.
8. MATILDA, b. 1843, Macktown, Winnebago Co., Ill.; d. after 1850.
9. CAROLINE E., b. 1846, Macktown, Winnebago Co., Ill.; d. after 1919, of Pontiac, Oakland Co., Mich.; m. EDWARD S. COOK; m. ARTHUR F. NEWBERRY.

Mack's children were well educated, and became useful members of society. His youngest daughter Carrie was taken in charge by the youngest brother of her father, Almon Mack of Rochester, Michigan, by whom she was raised and educated She still resides at Pontiac, and has been Regent of the Pontiac Chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution. (*Ibid.*)

Careful Listing of Exact Sources. The foregoing *genealogical record* of the family of Col. Stephen Mack and that of his son, Stephen Mack, Jr., and the accompanying *historical facts,* will indicate the great number of different sources which may contribute to a finished or even partly finished family record of only one or two generations. It is imperative that each source be carefully listed as to book or title of article, year of publication, author and pages. Key quotations should be given verbatim, that others may know where you obtained certain information.

An Adequate Index. A good modern family history has its carefully prepared name index, leading you definitely to the person sought. It is better to list under separate headings the two Stephen Macks, as (Col.) Stephen Mack

and Stephen Mack, Jr., rather than lumping them all together under the name Stephen. The name of every descendant of the family and every person who married a descendant should appear in the Index. Names only incidentally mentioned, with no family connection, may be omitted without loss.

A Table of Families. The Index usually appears at the end of a printed book. If the record is microfilmed it is usually better to film the Index first. It is also helpful to the researcher if you place at the beginning of the record a *Table of Families* — listing the name of the husband and the maiden name of the wife of each group of parents and children appearing in the genealogy. Thus for the Mack family as given above it would read:

	Page
Solomon Mack and Lydia Gates	10
Stephen Mack and Temperance Bond	35
Rhoda Mack and Asher Buckland	78
Mary Mack and David Dort	80
Ruth Mack and Benjamin Stanley	82
Lovica Mack and David Cooper	84
Stephen Mack, Jr., and Ho-no-ne-gah (Mary)	86
Harriet Mack and Rufus Hatch, Gideon Olin Whittemore	96
(Col.) Almon Mack and Elvira Jamieson	100
Almira Mack and Benjamin Covey	102
Achsah Mack and John Richard Whittemore	108

Thus the research may proceed, family by family, until the record of all the families derived from the common progenitor has been compiled.

Chapter 19 •

THE FIRST AMERICAN ANCESTOR

Research has been defined as "Careful search; studious inquiry, usually critical and exhaustive investigation or experimentation having for its aim the revision of accepted conclusions, in the light of newly discovered facts."

There is imperative need for this type of studious investigation in the field of genealogy. Since one of the most difficult problems facing the family historian is to obtain facts about the first comer to these shores, and most important of all a clue as to his European origin, then the very finest kind of research should be devoted to obtaining a complete knowledge of the first American ancestor.

Many Lines Stop with the Emigrant Ancestor. Out of all these American progenitors of a numerous progeny, by far the great majority have never been traced beyond the Atlantic Ocean. We may know the date of their arrival, even the boat on which they came, but beyond that all is mystery. To remedy that unfortunate situation, supreme efforts should be put forth to recover from the meager records of the past every item of interest. Every possible source should be studied, every discernible clue followed, every detail of information evaluated, in the hope that something may be found to give enlightenment and a key to the enigma.

Clues Which May Lead to Former Homes. There are actually a variety of clues which may point to records which will give the desired solution.

Thomas Boreman was of Ipswich, Massachusetts, in 1635. He had a wife Margaret, a daughter Mary who became the wife of Robert Kinsman, Jr., and a son with the unusual name of Offin Boreman. Thomas was Deputy to the General Court in 1636.

Mr. Henry F. Waters, a diligent searcher for English connections of American ancestors, found a marriage that had significance, in the parish register of St. Helen's, Bishopgate, London, 1575-1837, p. 132:

> 1630 Aug. 17 Thomas Bourman, batchelor and Cordwayner of London and Margaret Offing, maiden; by bands.

The Committee on English Research of the New England Historical and Genealogical Society felt that the "coincidence of names would seem to identify Thomas Bourman of London with Thomas Boreman of Ipswich, and suggests their being the same person." (*New England Historical and Genealogical Register,* Vol. 62, p. 303.)

Here the clue was the maiden name of the wife being used as the given name for the son.

In seeking to trace the ancestry of Clement Aldredge and his wife Elizabeth of Northumberland Co., Va. (see Chapter 12), the only discernible clue was that Aldridge families were known to have resided in the counties of Suffolk and Norfolk, England. Therefore Boyd's marriage Index for those counties was consulted, and the marriage of Clement Aldridge and his 2nd wife Elizabeth Tills was found in the parish of Worstead, Norfolk. Clement being a somewhat unusual given name made the identification all the more certain.

The Ancestry of Mary Sitts. Mary Sitts was born 18 May 1772, at Minden, Montgomery County, New York. It was said that her parents were Baldwin Sitts and Nancy House. She and her grandfather were taken into capitivity in Canada by the Indians. There she married and has left a numerous posterity. She died Sep. 8, 1859, aged 87 years (tombstone inscription). (See *Pioneer Sketches of the Long Point Settlement,* in Ontario Canada.)

Minden was earlier a part of Stone Arabia. In the records of the Lutheran Trinity Stone Arabia Church (F N. Y. S la) Vol. I, p. 282, is this record of the marriage of her parents:

> Balthasar Sis mit Anna Hausin September den 10 Anno 1771.

MARY SITTS, INDIAN CAPTIVE AND PIONEER MOTHER

This gives us the correct names of the father and mother. Nancy is actually a nickname for Anna. The christening of the mother shows she had another name:

Juni 20 1751	Hermanus Haus Maria Margaretha Wallradin	Anna Barbara	Adam Wallrad Anna Barbara uxor

This baptism is from the Reformed Dutch Church records of Stone Arabia, p. 11. Herman Haus was probably the aged grandfather killed by the Indians when his strength failed him in captivity on the long hard march to Canada; for the parents of Balthasar (or Baltus) Sitts apparently did not move to Minden. They were Peter Sutz and Margreta Borckert.

Their marriage is found in the records kept by the Palatine pastor, the Rev. Joshua Kocherthal, who frequently, in recording a wedding, gave facts about the parentage

and the German home of the groom and bride. Note the great value of these details:

> Marriages in the year 1715:
> 75. Nov. 1st: Johann Peter Sutz, son of Johann Dietrich Sutz, formerly a *citizen of Bellheim, Commune Germansheim, Palatinate,* and Anna Margaretha Burckhard, daughter of the late Johann Burckhard, formerly a *citizen of Ober-Magstatt, earldom of Isenberg.* (*Book of Names* (N. Y. M 4), p. 45.)

Among the baptisms performed by the same pastor are those of a brother and of a child of Peter Sutz. The wife of Peter's father, Johann Dietrich, was Magdalena.

> Baptisms in the year 1713:
> Febr. 21st: Andreas, born Febr. 18th, child of Dietrich and Magdalena Sutz; sponsors: Anna Maria Richter and Andreas Richter.
> (*Ibid.,* p. 24.)

> In the year 1716:
> Sept. 14th: Amilia, born Sept. 4th, child of Peter and Anna Margreth Sutz; sponsors: Johann Martin Burckhard and Amilia Klein.
> (*Ibid.,* p. 33.)

In the New York Subsistence List for the year 1710, among the Palatines are named Johannes Burckhardt with 4 in family over ten years of age, and 1 under ten; also Johann Dietrich Sutz, with 3 over ten and 1 under ten. (Knittle: *The Early Palatine Emigration* (R8A25), pp. 283, 290.)

According to the Simmendinger Register, printed in 1717 (R8A53), Peter Sutz and his wife with 1 child were then living at Raritan, N.J. Dieterich Sutz and Magdalena with 2 children were living at Beekmans Land. Elisabeth Burckhardt, widow (of Johannes) with 2 children was also at Beekmans Land. (pp. 18,12.)

The House Family of the Mohawk. From the foregoing entries we have learned the names of six progenitors of Balthasar Sutz, father of Mary Sitts. On the ancestry of her mother, Anna Barbara (Nancy) Haus, we get help from a little printed volume entitled *The House Family of*

the Mohawk, by Melvin Rhodes Shaver, of Ransomville, N.Y. It begins:

> In order to find the progenitor of the House lines who live in or have descended from the Mohawk Valley families, we must go back to the period 1708-1709. Among the Palatinate refugees who came from England to America with the Rev. Joshua Kocherthal was one Christian Hauss. We find also in the church records of the Rev. Kocherthal the following:
>
> Married Sept. 27, 1710, Christian Hauss, widower, a carpenter *of Alten-Staden, near Welzlar in the duchy of Solms,* to Anna Catherine, widow of the late Johann Becker *of Durnberg, near Deitz in the sovereignty of Schomberg.*
>
> It is supposed that Christian Hauss' first wife as well as Johann Becker died on the voyage over, or soon after reaching these shores, as history of that period tells us that sickness and privations took many lives, both on the voyage over and the winter following. In the census of 1713-1714 (actually the Simmendinger Register, 1717) it is shown that Christian Hauss and wife Maria Catherina together with eight children were living at Neu-Heesburg (New Haysbury) on the Hudson River. It can be easily seen that most of these children were by the first wife and bears out a tradition in the House family, "that six brothers came from England to America together." The names of these six sons of Christian House will be given later in this writing. There is a record of Christian Houys being naturalized October 11, 1715. At the present time we have been unable to learn whether Christian Hauss left any children by his second marriage, and we are sorry to say we have been unable to find a record of the name of his first wife, the mother of the children he brought to America with him.
>
> In Governor Hunter's list of Palatines who received assistance (ration list) was the name of John Christian Haus, identical with the Christian Haus mentioned above. . . .
>
> Of course Christian Hauss may, and probably did, have children by his second wife, as we have drawn from the records the names of six sons and two daughters and the name of one other male whom we have been unable to place. The names of these six sons are as follows: Reinhard, Johannes, *George, Harmonas,* Conrad and Peter. There is also a male named Elias. . . .
>
> The branch of the family in whom we are most interested was the one which journeyed up the Hudson, went west along the Mohawk until they reached the settlement in what was usually termed the Mohawk Valley. (pp. 3-4)

Of these six sons, George and Herman (Harmonas) settled at Stone Arabia, and had children christened there.

In the Rev. Somers' register of baptisms is this entry: "A little girl of Herman Haus baptized Oct. 1, 1749."

Of more direct concern is the christening of Anna Barbara Haus, daughter of Hermanus Haus and Maria Margaretha Wallrad already quoted above, for this child lived to become the mother of Mary Sitts.

The Walrath Family. The earliest ancestor on the Wallrad or Walrath family is thus described by Milo Nellis, of St. Johnsville, N.Y.:

> The Walrath Family is one of those prolific families whose arrival in New York in the summer of 1710 created such a profound influence on our national history through their almost incredible sufferings and discouragements, that their story must ever be remembered as an important part of our national history. It was these Palatines and their descendants that tamed and defended the Mohawk Valley wilderness.
>
> In the 1710 subsistence lists of Governor Hunter's Hudson River tar camps we find Gerhardt Walrath's family consisting of two adults and two children under ten years of age. Also Hendrick Walrath's family of two adults only. In 1712, Gerhart's family is listed as three adults, no children, while Hendrick's family is given as two adults and one child. We can therefore date the birth of Gerhard's oldest child as born about 1701 or 2, the two younger children having evidently died. We can also date the birth of Hendrick's first child as either 1711 or 1712.
>
> Then in 1717, Ulrich Simmendinger, one of the immigrants, returned to Europe and there published a list of survivors remaining in America, at which time he reported the family of Gerhart Walrath and wife Maria and three children and Heinrich Walrath with wife Christina and two children. Evidently Gerhard had two more children born between 1712 and 1717, while Hendrick added one to his family in the same period. It is assumed that Gerhart and Hendrick were brothers.
>
> In 1718 the Palatines sent three of their comrades to London to seek justice. The three were Gerhart Walrath, William Scheff, and John Conrad Weiser. They sailed from Philadelphia, but pirates robbed them and the ship had to put into Boston for new repairs and supplies, and on arrival in London the Palatine deputies were imprisoned for debt. . . . In disappointment Walrath sailed for New York but died before reaching home. Scheff also returned in 1721, after three years' absence, but he too died within six weeks of his return, and

finally in November 1723 Weiser also returned dissatisfied with the conditions offered. (*St. Johnsville Enterprise and News,* Nov. 12, 1952, pp. 131-132.)

Much has been printed of the Walrath families descended from these two. Among their descendants was Maria Margretha Wallrad, grandmother of Mary Sitts,

The Schaffer (Shafer) Family. Another Palatine family with many thousands of descendants today is that descended from Gerhard Schaffer and his wife Anna Maria Van Hoff. He is said to have been born in the year 1665; they were married by the year 1685. In the year 1709 with his wife and two sons he joined the Palatine emigration to England. Before leaving they obtained the following recommend from the Mayor and court of their local municipality, and this document is still in excellent preservation: (translation)

> There appeared before us the worthy GERHARDT SHEFFER with his wedded housewife, ANNA MARIA, residing in the Kersey Bell Zorn, called Hilgert Dorf, and well endowed, and the above Gerhardt Scheffer is of good character. He requests that a testimonial of his good character be given of us as Mayor and court of the whole congregation and all the neighbors in the whole district.
>
> And as Mayor, Court and all his neighbors, we give this testimony with truthfulness and with our names subscribed and with the impress of our usual court seal concerning his good conduct . . . that he has lived with us in Hilgert Dorf with his housewife 24 years and has conducted himself well and honestly so that all his neighbors have regarded him as a faithful neighbor and were entirely satisfied with him, and the neighbors would have been much pleased if it had been God's will that he remain longer here.
>
> Hence we as Mayor, the whole court, and all the neighbors in the whole district give the above named Gerhardt Scheffer and his housewife and their two children this testimony of their good conduct.
>
> This testimony, wholly and truthfully subscribed, is sealed with our usual court seal. This is done in the year 1709 the 26th day of May.
>
> Johannes Thomas Bush, Mayor
> Zohloh Pruesen, Clerk of the Court.

Two locations have been given for the place Hilgert Dorf. One is that it is Hilgersdorf, in the Kreis Nieder-

bayern, Bavaria, near the Czechoslovakian border. The other and more likely conclusion is that it is Hilgert Dorf in Hesse-Nassau.

The excellent volume, *The Early Palatine Emigration,* by Walter Allen Knittle, Ph. D., 1937, reproduces on pages 48-49 the original of the above letter of recommendation, which "original remains in the possession of Schaeffer's descendants, the Kingsley family, of the Rocks, Schoharie, N.Y."

In 1709 thousands of emigrants from the Palatinate, Germany, were taking advantage of inducements offered to seek their fortune in the New World. Records made in Holland show that in the Fifth Party, which embarked at Rotterdam July 3 to July 10, 1709 and sailed for England on July 15, 1709, were "GERHARD SCHEEFER & vrouw, 2 children." This list is now in the Public Record Office, London, England. Along with it is a list of 2,257 Palatines sent back to Holland as Roman Catholics in 1709, among them: "GERHARD SCHEEFER, wife and 2 children." Yet in some manner they were able to come to New York with the other Palatines when they sailed. In Dr. Knittle's book are these interesting facts:

> Scarcely had the harsh winter season of 1708-9 begun to relax its hold in February, when various inhabitants of the Rhine Valley hopefully began their preparations to go to England. These consisted mainly of gathering up their few possessions and securing a recommendation from the local authorities. . . .
>
> The passage down the Rhine to Holland took from four to six weeks. This journey was beset with many delays and inconveniences. Fees and tolls were frequently demanded. . . . Along the river the Palatines were presented with money and food by pious countrymen, many of whom regarded the pilgrims with envious eyes, wishing they too might be seeking their fortune in the New World. (pp. 47-50, 269, 279.)

In England they were dependent upon the English government to keep them from starvation, and this became a financial burden. Finally they were embarked for New York in December, but did not set sail until April 1710.

They were on board ship for six long months, and an official report showed that about 470 died on the voyage or during the first month they were encamped in New York.

Preserved are the "New York Subsistence Lists," showing those who were given supplies to sustain them from the time of their arrival until Sept. 1712. In 1710 Gerhard Schaffer was listed with 3 adults and 1 child. In 1712 his family consisted of 4 adults and 1 child. (*Ibid.*, p. 289.) In 1711 he volunteered as a soldier in the Canadian Expedition. After his death his widow lived with her sons in the Schoharie district. Her burial is thus recorded in the register of the Schoharie Lutheran church register:

> Feb. 17 1744 died Maria Schafer and Feb. 19th buried. She was 76 years old. The sermon at the grave was *Isaiah* 57, 1-2.

Their oldest son was Johannes, b. 1690; d. 15 May 1777, aged 87, Cobleskill; who married Anna Maria Zoller. Their son was Adam Schaffer who married Maria Magdalena Huls or Hils. Their son John and daughter Maria, wife of Jacob Merkley, went with the Loyalists to Upper Canada, and have a numerous posterity. But there are also many of the descendants of this Schaffer (Shaver) family in New York and the West. (See Chapter 3 of this text.)

Example of a Forged Connection. In being alert to every possible clue to an oversea home, the genealogist must also be alert to avoid having fraudulent pedigree connections foisted upon him. The compiler of the Matthew Woodruff genealogy was at first so deceived. He paid a so-called genealogist to provide him with the English ancestry of the emigrant. This was done, and the new information was published to the world. It purported to give the Woodruff genealogy back for many generations in England, and showed Matthew as the son of Sir David Woodroofe of Poyle, Surrey, and Lettice Duncombe. Actually Sir David died 13 Feb. 1603-4, and could not have had a son Matthew born in 1612. It was David's son Robert, born 1600, who married Lettice Duncombe; and he certainly could not have had a son born in 1612. Moreover, all the earlier generations so promptly supplied were

spurious, and no records can be found to verify them. The true pedigree of the English Woodroffes will be found printed in *Miscellanea Genealogica at Heraldica,* Vol. ii, p. 380; and in *East Barnet, Herts.,* p. 92.

The author of the American line stated ruefully, after the wrong publication:

> After this was published it occurred to me to take up the matter and substantiate certain data furnished by Norris Woodruff. Therefore, I entered into correspondence with several genealogists in London. After considerable research by them and considerable financial cost to me, they reported as far as they could learn, Sir David Woodruff of Poyle, England, had no son by the name of Matthew. . . . Therefore, it is my sincere belief that this party who styled himself as Norris Woodruff and sold the information to Mr. Mackenzie and myself was an impostor.

The Canova Family of Florida. W. Henry Chace, for many years a devoted member of the staff of the Genealogical Society, and his brother, President Alvin C. Chace, of Florida Stake, are the paternal grandsons of Julia Eoline Zewadski, daughter of John Hermon Zewadski, a native of Poland, and, traditionally, one of the noblemen of Poland, but exiled from his native land when it was conquered by the Germans.

The mother of these two brothers was Adaline Canova. By research among the original Spanish Catholic registers of St. Augustine, Florida, he was able to find twenty-eight direct ancestors, twenty of whom were before unknown to him. It was very helpful to him when the government employed Leon J. Canova, a cousin of his grandfather, and a noted lecturer throughout North and South America, to translate some of these early St. Augustine registers. Since then two volumes of these have been published. The descendants now have a thriving Canova Family Organization, intent on tracing the line beyond Florida.

To them the entries in these printed St. Augustine registers are of great value, and especially in those relating to the first ancestor to make his home in Florida, Antonio Canovas. The earliest baptism recorded in Vol. I reads:

ADALINE CANOVA AND HUSBAND, WILLIAM HENRY CHACE

Page 82 Entry 161

Bartolomeo Pedro Martin Canovas, born November 10, 1787. Baptized November 11, 1787. Son of Antonius Canovas, Layo, Insula Minorca, and Catalina Mestre. Sponsors: Petrus Mestre, *Mahon,* Minorca, and Agatha Ridavetts, *Layo,* Minorca. Priest: Miguel O'Reilly. (page 40)

You will note the tendency to use the Latin forms of the names. Both the parents and the witnesses were from towns on the Island of Minorca, one of the Balearic Islands in the Mediterranean off the coast of Spain. The baptism of the child from whom they are descended is given thus, in Vol. II:

Page 83 Entry 187

Antonio Joseph Venancio Canovas, born April 1, 1794. Baptized April 3, 1794. Son of Antonio Canovas and Catalina Mestre, both natives of Leon, Isle de Menorca. Sponsors: Geronimo Alvarez and Maria Rodger, San Agustin. Priest: Miguel O'Reilly. (page 44)

When the next child was christened, the most important entry of all was made, for it gave the names of the four grandparents:

Page 146 Entry 310

Antonia Canovas, born May 7, 1796. Baptized May 9, 1796. Daughter of Antonio Canovas, native of Villa de Leon, Isla de Menorca, son of Antonio and Juana Ridavets, and Catalina Mestre, native of Villa de Leon, daughter of Bartolome and Antonia Roger. Sponsors: Geronimo Alvarez and Antonia Venz. San Agustin. Priest: Miguel O'Reilly. (page 74)

Bruno Roselli in his *The Italians in Colonial Florida,* 1513-1821, lists ANTONIO CANOVA, as a *native of Italy,* who came over with the Turnbull colony, and married Catarina Maestre. The story of this colony is highly interesting.

When Florida was ceded to England in 1763, Andrew Turnbull, a Scotch physician, was given a grant of 20,000 acres in East Florida, on condition that within ten years he settle one person to each hundred acres. He stopped in Leghorn, Italy, and started to recruit Italian colonists, enlisting 110 sober and industrious people. These he took to Mahon, the principal port of Menorca. Most of the

Italian recruits were young bachelors, but Minorcan girls came to the rescue, and soon all the Italians were married.

Joined by other settlers from Greece these Italians and their wives left Mahon, 30 April 1768, on seven crowded ships, with 1,403 men, women and children aboard. They were brought in as indentured servants, and were bound to serve their master a specified number of years.

> Due to insufficient diet on the long voyage a number of the colonists developed scurvy. Over 300 of them died that fall and winter. During the ensuing nine years the settlement led a precarious existence, often on the verge of starvation. . . . In the meantime the Smyrna colonists were left largely to the mercy of overseers, trained in handling negro slaves, who subjected the settlers to treatment as brutal as that given negroes on the worst southern plantations of the period. . . . Finally a body of ninety of the settlers came to St. Augustine, asking for relief. In the . . . affidavits there is much testimony complaining of starvation, beatings, chaining and forced extensions of contracts. . . . Based on this evidence a case was brought against Turnbull in the court at St. Augustine which resulted in the colonists being released from their contracts. They abandoned New Smyrna and came to St. Augustine on foot, taking three days to make the journey. . . .
>
> Gradually the whole congregation (in St. Augustine) became known as "The Minorcans." However, many Italian names still persist, among which are Andreu, *Canova,* Capella, Falaney, Leonardy, Pacetti and Usina.

Thus from the horrible adversity of hunger and hardship, sickness, cruelty, torture and death, a new colony was founded in Florida, and families from the Mediterranean became the forefathers of numberless Americans of today.

Chapter 20 •

THE FAMILY HOME IN EUROPE

Sooner or later, in all your searching of American records, you will inevitably come to the emigrant ancestor from Europe. Your desire, of course, is to carry the line farther by use of the records of his former homeland. The types of records you will encounter in this new area of research will differ somewhat from those you are accustomed to use in America, but the basic principles of research will remain the same. Your experience with American records should aid you in the oversea quest.

Some examples of actually tracing the family in European records will now be given, to demonstrate just what was required in each case.

The Ancestry of Thomas Richards. Thousands of families in America trace their ancestry back to Thomas Richards of Dorchester, Massachusetts. For a long time his home in England, before he emigrated to America, was unknown. In the *Planters of the Commonwealth,* by Charles Edward Banks, page 90, we find that he came from Pitminster, Somerset, England, probably in 1630, with a wife Welthian and children John, James, Mary, Anne and Alice.

Pitminster, we find, is a parish, with registers dating back to the year 1542. The printed marriages for Pitminster, covering the years 1542-1812, are in our Library, and include these marriages of Richards:

William Richard and Joan Thorne	15 Jan.	1572-3.
Eliza Scadden of Angelsly & Joane Richards, d. of Joan Richards, w.	21 Nov.	1603.
Philipe Torry, s. of William Torry, Parish of Comb St. Nicholas & Alice Richards, d. of James Richards, parish of Pitminster	27 Nov.	1604.
Clement Snocke & Mary Richards, d. of Joan Richards, w.	9 June	1606.

John Chard, of Gescombe & Joan Richards, d. of Thomas Richards	28	July	1614.
Stephen Bronsie & Anne Richards	8	Nov.	1620.
John Browne & Dorothy Richards	1	Dec.	1624.
Richard Lynnam & Tomasin Richards	29	Sep.	1625.

There is no other marriage of a Richards before 1675 in this parish. It is impossible to construct a pedigree from marriages only. But they are necessary, to be used with other records. So a genealogist was employed to go to the parish of Pitminster and copy all christenings and burials of those bearing the surname of Richards during the years 1542 to 1650. These entries when received were grouped in families, as follows:

Children of Thomas Richards:

Marie,	chr. 11	Nov.	1620.
John,	chr. 13	Feb.	1625.
Annie,	chr. 1	Nov.	1626.
Alice,	chr. 7	Apr.	1629.
Hannah,	chr. 26	Oct.	1630.
James,	chr. 13	Sep.	1632.
Mary,	chr. 16	Nov.	1632.

The wife of Thomas Richards is not mentioned, but of the above children John, James, Mary, Anna and Alice came to America with their parents. John married in Massachusetts Elizabeth Winthrop; Anne married Ephraim Hunt; Alice married Major William Bradford; Hannah died unmarried; Mary married Governor Thomas Hinckley; James married Sarah Gibbons.

The baptism of Thomas Richards, father of these children, is found in this next group:

Children of Thomas Richards:

Joan,	chr. 19	Apr.	1594;	md. 28 July 1614, John Chard.
Thomas,	chr. 15	Apr.	1596;	md. Welthian....
Dorothy,	chr. 21	May,	1603;	md. 4 Dec. 1624, John Browne.
James,	chr. 19	Oct.	1605;	bur. 30 July 1645.
Christopher,	chr. 21	Feb.	1608;	perhaps bur. 9 Nov. 1623.

There is no record in Pitminster of the christening of this older Thomas Richards, but it seems probable that he was a son of *James Richards,* perhaps born before the family moved to the parish.

Children of James Richards:

Joan,	chr. 21 Jan. 1573.	
William,	chr. 21 Jan. 1575.	
Susanna,	chr. 31 Mar. 1576.	
John,	chr. 3 May, 1579.	
Alice,	chr. 21 Jan. 1581;	md. 27 Nov. 1604, Phillip Torrey.
William,	chr. 12 Apr. 1583.	

The daughter Alice made her will 24 April 1634. She is ancestress of the American Torrey family, including the mother of President William Howard Taft and grandmother of his son, Senator Robert A. Taft.

The will of James Richards of Pitminster was proved at Taunton in 1607-8. He was buried at Pitminster 19 January 1608. Unfortunately the Taunton wills were sent to Exeter, Devon, and were destroyed in bombings during the second World War.

William Richards, perhaps a brother of James, married 15 Jan. 1573, Joan Thorne; and was buried 13 May 1601. Their children were:

Joan, chr. 21 Jan. 1576; md. 21 Nov. 1603, Elize Scadden.
Mary, chr. 29 May, 1579; md. 9 June 1606, Clement Snocke.
John, chr. 10 Mar. 1583.

A William Richards was buried in Pitminster 21 Sept. 1565. He may have been the father of James and William. In order to prove this it is necessary to obtain a copy of his will, proved in 1565 at Taunton, Somerset. That will, as indicated above, is now among the missing, lost at Exeter during the war.

The Ancestry of Robert Pyle. Most genealogical researchers have one or more lines which appear to have been traced as far back as possible, and on these lines they are at a dead standstill. Too often such researchers become hopelessly discouraged. They convince themselves that this part of their pedigree is untraceable, and they adopt a mental

attitude of dejection reminding one of the statue "The End of the Trail."

The first step to take in tracing back on one of these "impossible" lines is to *believe* that it can be done; the second is to *determine* that it shall be traced, by using every available source. Study every source relating to this ancestor, every record made at the places where he was born or resided, to enlarge your knowledge of him to the greatest possible extent.

For example, one of the 6th great-grandfathers of President J. Reuben Clark, Jr., is Robert Pile or Pyle, of Chester County, Pennsylvania. In building up a more detailed and intimate acquaintance with the facts of his life we go to the *History of Chester County, Pa.*, by *Futhey* and Cope. By the index we are guided to the following account:

> *Pyle.* The first document recorded in our oldest deed book is a power of attorney from Robert Pyle, "of Stanton Barnard, in the County of Wilts, Yeoman," to Robert Pyle, Jr., and Nicholas Pyle, of Pennsylvania, dated August 29, 1688. The latter were probably sons of the former, and they had a brother Ralph, who was also among the early settlers.
>
> *Robert Pyle,* of Horton, in the parish of Bishop's Cannings, Wiltshire, England, maltster, was married to Ann, the daughter of William Stovey, of Hilperton, in the same county, yeoman, the 16th of 9th Mo. (November) 1681. The exact time of the migration of this young couple to America is not known, but we find them settled in Bethel as early as 1684. They were both in membership with the Friends. . . . He was a representative in the Provincial Assembly for many years, and also served a long time as one of the justices of the County Court. He died in Bethel, 1730. (pp. 701-702)

From the valuable Quaker record of migration and marriage we learn the home parish of Robert Pyle is Bishops Cannings, Wilts. He probably had brothers Nicholas and Ralph. They were not, as surmised, a son of Robert Pyle of Stanton Bernard, but may have been close relatives.

Logically the next step was to search the printed parish registers of Bishops Cannings. It contained a number of Pyle, Pile and Pille entries. It was found that Robert Pile was christened 29 Dec. 1660, the son of Nicholas Pile and

Edith Maspratt or Muspratt. There were in all eight children of Nicholas and Edith, including Nicholas, chr. 12 Aug. 1666; and Ralph, chr. 31 Jan. 1670-1; both of whom emigrated to Pennsylvania.

The father, Nicholas Pile, was chr. 13 Mar. 1625-6, at Bishops Canning, the son of John Pile and Mary — The baptisms of four other children of John and Mary were copied.

In this way, by following the place clues, a firm footing was established for tracing the family further in England.

Ancestry Traced in Finland. There are many families in America of Scandinavian descent. Most all the records in Denmark, Norway, Sweden, Finland and Iceland, which are of genealogical worth, have been microfilmed, and are in our Genealogical Library. How research may now be made comfortably in them, without the impediments of war and other hindrances, will be emphasized by this research story.

BEATA LOVISA ABRAMS ANDERSON

Beata Lovisa Abrams was born 11 Jan. 1850, in Vora, Vaasa, Finland. She grew to womanhood and married Johan Andersson, a man of wealth and influence, who lived in Skanela, Stockholm, Sweden, and there they became popular with their neighbors and friends. They were not blessed with children. After the death of her husband she came to Utah to be with those of her faith. Without family or relatives, she worked hard and by most rigid economy put aside from her earnings several thousands of dollars. By her will she provided that this money be used for research on her ancestry in Finland.

In compliance with the terms of her will the manuscript containing her genealogy was tabulated. This included the family group of her father and mother, with the names and birthplaces of all her brothers and sisters.

At first no progress was made in the research in Finland. Years went by but despite several diligent efforts no further connections were found there. On 30 Dec. 1937, the Genealogical Society wrote to the Mayor of Helsinki, Finland, asking him to recommend a reliable genealogist or genealogical society to make the desired search. The mayor handed the letter Baron Tor Carpelan, genealogist for the Finnish nobility, who wrote saying he was willing to make the search, and asking for more genealogical details.

Then came the war between Russia and Finland, and the urgency of getting these records before they were destroyed prompted the Genealogical Society to send money to Mr. Carpelan to make all haste in completing the research. Months elapsed with no reply. The war ended, but still no further word. The cablegram had reached him while he was evacuated from Helsinki; and he could then do nothing but write letters to several clergymen, who were slow in answering, owing to the difficulties of that dreadful time. But he was engaged in the search, doing all he could, despite the fact that the Finnish State Archives were closed during the European War.

Within the month came a pedigree chart from him giving the names and identification of 67 direct ancestors of Beata Lovisa Abrams. It was an excellent record, but

named only one child in each family. It was pointed out to him that every child in each family was desired.

When complying with this second request, he sent one instalment of genealogy on a Finnish boat from Petsamo. This was torpedoed at sea, and the records were lost. Funds were then sent so that the new and more complete set of records he had prepared could be sent by airmail. Thus it arrived safely, just before the renewal of hostilities between Russia and Finland.

This proved to be as excellent a genealogical record as ever received by the Genealogical Society, and contained the names of 542 of her kindred. The compiler had personally visited some localities on the western coast of Finland and gathered the data himself.

Now those of Finnish descent are visiting our Library and finding their forefathers among the great quantity of filmed records from Finland.

The House of Salazar. This next example is one of research in Mexico and Spain, which led to amazing results.

Living in Salt Lake City some years ago was Eufemio Salazar, a Spanish-American, born Oct. 10, 1888, at Manassa, Colorado. He began to seek out the records of his forefathers. His father's brother, Guadalupe Salazar, a member of the Territorial Legislature of New Mexico, had told him before his death he was sure they were descended from a Spanish family some time in the past. Beyond this Eufemio was able to get little beyond the first few generations of his pedigree.

Nothing daunted, he searched in the Library of the Genealogical Society and in the city library. In the latter place he found a book which gave the name of an organization in Chicago with a department which specialized in tracing Spanish families. He submitted his problem to them; and they in turn referred him to the Mexican Delegation of the Royal Society of Genealogy and Heraldry in the City of Mexico, furnishing him with the name of its Secretary.

The latter was appealed to. He replied that he could trace the Salazar family back for about eighteen generations to one of the progenitors who came from Spain. The re-

search would cost $15.00; a certificate $10.00; and a colored copy of the family coat-of-arms $5.00. Eufemio Salazar sent his order for this research in April and received the pedigree in October.

It began with Jean de Salazar, who lived over 500 years ago in Auvergne, in Southern France, whither the family had fled from Viscaya in Spain to escape the tyranny of the Moors, who were continually invading the region of Viscaya. In 1441 he married Margarita, the natural daughter of George de la Fremoille, Count of Guines and Baron of Sully. Jean de Salazar died in 1479. His son, Hector Enrique de Salazar, married Elena de Chastelux and was made Baron St. Just, and Chamberlain to the French King. He accompanied King Louis XII in an expedition to Italy. His death occurred in 1502; and he left a son, Francisco de Salazar, who became the second Baron St. Just. He married Marie de St. Simon and to them were born two sons and a daughter. The second son was Juan de Salazar, who went to Spain, and from there to the New World, becoming a famous Captain of conquistadores.

The Salazar Coat-of-Arms. On May 20, 1547, King Charles of Spain and Emperor of the Holy Roman Empire granted a coat-of-arms to Don Juan de Salazar and his descendants in these words:

"Because of thy deeds, Captain Don Juan de Salazar, during the last twelve years, we wish to honor thee. With the desire of serving us thou wentest with Don Pedro de Mendoza to the Province of Buenos Aires and took part in the discovery of the Rio De La Plata, and upon arrival there didst serve us in every way possible. Thou didst help found the city of Asuncion, making all the Spaniards in that vicinity work towards its establishment. When this work was well under way thou didst labor to bring about peace among all the Indians of the countryside, and at the same time thou didst do much towards discovering new country inland. Always thou didst conduct thyself as a true captain of the people who were under thy jurisdiction and didst serve us as a loyal, good vassal.

"In addition to the above there was in the said Province a tiger that was doing great damage throughout the land by killing many Christian Spaniards. Thou, in company with some of thy soldiers, didst go forth to battle with the tiger and when it came at thee thou didst slay it and thus put a stop to its many killings.

"Also it so happened that certain Guarani Indians did raid the Province of Buenos Aires and steal eighty horses belonging to the Christian Spaniards. After doing this they did set fire and burn a portion of the City of Buenos Aires. Thou, alone with thy horse, didst pursue and battle them and in the end didst take the stolen horses from the Indians.

"Because of the information presented before us in the Council of the Indies and other places we do wish to remunerate thee for thy services. We wish to give thee something that will last forever. We do bequeath to thee, in addition to the shields and family crests that by lineage thou art entitled to, an additional coat-of-arms." (This was then described in armorial detail.) "Given at Guadalajara the twentieth day of May in 1547." A copy of the coat in color was enclosed with the report.

A Founder of Santa Fe. Among those who went with Onate to found the city of Santa Fe in 1595-6 was Juan de Salazar, son of the conquistadore to whom was granted the coat-of-arms. This second Juan de Salazar was the ancestor of the Salazar descendants that today are found in the region of Santa Fe. These for generations intermarried with women of the native race. The pedigree continued on down a number of generations until it made a direct connection with the information already in the possession of Eufemio Salazar.

Such was the genealogy gleaned from the books in the Genealogical Library in the City of Mexico. Upon the official certificate of descent issued with the report appears these words:

> It is very important, for those who can honor themselves with the proof of their ancestors, to search, inquire and in-

vestigate all the particulars they can find concerning the name they inherit from their parents and grandparents.

That advice is applicable to all genealogical searchers.

Today, with a number of microfilming cameras in full operation in Mexico, many thousands of rolls of film of records from that country are now in the vaults of our Genealogical Library. Those of that descent, with the same desire as Eufemio Salazar, may now, if qualified, seek out their own ancestry among these many microfilms.

Clues for Old World Research. From the foregoing it will be seen that the problem in each case of oversea research is to ascertain the place of origin of the family, and then search intensively the records of that place.

Mention was made in an earlier chapter of the Merkley family of Williamsburg, Ontario, Canada. Jacob Merckel (Merkel or Merkley), brother-in-law of John Shaver, was born 17 Oct. 1747, and came to Canada as a United Empire Loyalist. As such he made claim at Montreal, 28th January 1788, stating that "He is a native of Germany. He came to America about 30 years since. He lived at Tryon County on his own Lands at a place called Duscta, or Cobus Kite (Cobleskill). He joined the British at Fort Stanwix in 1777." (*Second Report of the Bureau of Archives for Ontario,* 1904, p. 395.)

"A native of Germany" requires more explicit definition. The death of his father is entered in this manner on the records of the Schoharie Lutheran Church: "Sept 14 1772 CHRISTOPHER FRIEDRICH MERCKLE, of Durlach. He was struck down by a tree; was over 50 years old." (p. 238)

The *Schoharie County Historical Review,* May 1952, p. 25, tells how Sebastian Frantz led a group from his birthplace in Wurtemberg, Germany, in the year 1752. "On this same voyage as companions from their native Germany they were accompanied by CHRISTOPHER and MICHAEL MARCLEY and Ernest Fritz." Another account says of their settlement: "This Cobleskill creek in the town of the same name . . . runs through the town of New Dorlach, so called from the name of *the place the first*

four settlers came from in Wertenberg, Germany, who settled there in the last French war. Their names were Earnest Fritz, Michael Merkele, *Christopher Merkele* and Sebastian Frantz, who came from Germany in the year 1752." (*A Brief Sketch of the First Settlement of the County of Schoharie by the Germans,* by John M. Brown, 1823, p. 14.)

This points clearly to the town of Durlach, Baden, Germany, as the logical place to begin the search for the ancestry of Christopher Friedrich Merkley.

In Chapter 10 of this text the marriage was quoted of Georg Salzmann, widower, *of Stollberg, in the Upper Lausitz, electorate of Saxony,* and Anna Margretha Kaputzgi, daughter of the late Johann Jacob Kaputzgi, formerly a *citizen of Erbelheim on the Rhine, duchy of Darmstadt.*

Note the place locations given here for tracing both the Salzmann and Kaputzgi lines.

The English Origin of Joshua Wright. In seeking to trace the ancestry of Joshua Wright of New Jersey, progenitor of Pres. Heber J. Grant, it was found he was a party to a number of deeds in East Jersey and West Jersey. One said:

> 1697 Oct. 1. Deed from Joshua Wright, *late of Ashford in the Water,* Co. of Derby, yeoman, to George Hutcheson, for 912 acres in W. J. (West Jersey Records, Liber B. Part 1, in *New Jersey Archives,* 21:500.)

Ashford was in the parish of Bakewell. Quaker records yielded further facts, as witness this entry from the *History of Burlington County, N. J.,* p. 276:

> Joshua Wright, of Rouldon, married Elizabeth, daughter of William Empson, "of gowld Field house, the 10th day of ye 4th mo. 1669." . . . "Joshua and his family took ship at hull ye 24 day of ye 6 mo and came to ye fall of delaware river about ye 20 day of ye 10 1679." . . . Joshua Wright died "ye 10 of ye 8 mo 1695." Elizabeth, his wife, died "ye 12 day of 1 mo, 1705."

The will of Joshua Wright, written March 25 1690, was proved Oct. 7 1695; and was printed in abstract in the *New Jersey Archives,* Vo. 23, p. 527.

INDEX

Names may appear more than once on a page.

A

Abbott, Isaac, 83, 86
Abrams, Beata Lovisa, 241, pedigree, 242
Adam, lines traced to, 30
Adams, Adaline, 130
  Benjamin Franklin, 128, 130
  Caleb, 130
  Elizabeth, 130
  George W., 130
  James Madison, 128, 130
  Jane, 129
  Pres. John, 110
  Levi Brandon, 130
  Thomas Joshua, 130
  William, 128-129, 134
  William Armstrong, 128, 130
Ahl, C. W., 150
  D. V., 150
Aldredge (Aldridge, Aldrich, Aldrige, Aldridg, ed, Arledge, Arlidge), Aldred, Allred, Alder-ed, Arledge, Arlidge), Alice, 141-142, 145
  Agnes, 145
  Clement, 141-145, 224
  Clement, Jr., 141-142
  Elizabeth, 141-143, 224
  Grace, 141
  Rev. Henry, 144
  Isaac, 141, 143
  Jane, 143
  John, 141-145
  Mary, 142
  Sarah, 142-143
  Susan, 145
  Thomas, 144
  William, 141-143
  Winifred, 141
Alexander, Mary Brandon, 102-103
  Margaret, 106
  William, 102
Allgar, Bridget, 107
Alvarado, Governor, 158
Alvarez, Geronimo. 234
Amsley, Isabel, 154
Anderson (Andersson), Bernice Gibbs, 204
  Beat Lovisa Abrams, 240-241
  Johan, 241
Anza, Juan Bautista, 156
Armstrong, Abel, 132
  Capt., 132
  Elizabeth, 132-133
  James, 132
  Rebecca, 132
Arnold, Benedict, 199
  Gen. Benedict, 199
Aunt Bessie, 17
Aunt Maggie, 17

B

Backus, Anna Margretha, 127
Bailey, Caroline, 83
  Caroline Cheney, 87
  Jonathan, 87
  Sylva Davis, 87
Bair, Robert Cabeen, 47
Baird, 91
Banks, Charles Edward, 236
  Katherine, 108, 113
Barnes, Amanda, 164
  Ezekial, 164
  family, 164
  Hannah, 164
  Nathan, 164
Barnett (Bernard), Catherine, 194, 208
Barry, Catherine, 103
Basil, 206-208
Bates, Fleming, 182
  Samuel, 150
Bazil, Maggie, 207
Bealls, 172
Bean (Been), Jane, 165-166, 170, 173
Beane, William, 142
Beard, Thomas, 170-171
Beauciel, Marguerite, 92
Becker, Anna Catherine, 227
  Johann, 227
Bell, Agnes, 170-171
  Alfred, 166-169
  Andrew. 170-172
  Ann, 172
  Arthur, 172
  Betsy (Elizabeth), 166-167, 169
  Darcus, 172
  Eli, 166-167
  Elizabeth, 165-166, 172
  George, 172
  Hannah, 170-171
  Hiram, 166-167
  Isabel, 170-171
  James, 172
  Jane, 166-169, 173-174
  Jane Bean, 174
  Jane Grayham, 167
  Jean, 170-172
  John, 166-167, 172-173
  Joseph, 172
  Mrs. Louisa A. McClellan, 166
  Margaret, 172
  Mary (Polly), 165-167, 172
  Mary Bennett, 167
  Robert, 165-167, 170-174
  Robert Eagleton, 170
  Roland, 172
  Rose, 172
  Samuel, 172
  Sarah, 169, 172
  Thomas, 172
  Thomas, Jr., 172
  Walter, 172
  William, 165-167, 169-174
  William Milton, 167
Belletre, 69
Bennett, Elisha, 194-196
  Elizabeth, 196
  Elizabeth Bell, 166
  Hiram Bell, 165
  Lucy, 194-195
  Martha Jane, 208
  Mary, 165
  Mary Bell, 166-167
  Richard, 165, 167, 194, 208
  William, 194, 208
  William Bell, 165
  William J., 165-167, 169, 194-195
Bennion, John, 114
  Samuel O., 107
Benson, Charles, 154
Berger, Frederick, 182
Bernal, Maria Sarah, 156
Bernard, Corderoy, 182
  Robert, 146-147
  William, 145-146
Berryessa (Berreyessa, Berrelleza), Encarnacion, 159-160

Family, 156-159
Francisco, 158
Frank Joseph, 156
Jose Ignacio, 158
Jose de Jesus, 157
Jose de los Reyes,156-158
Jose de los Santos, 156-157, 159
Maria Isabella, 157
Nemesio, 158-160
Nicholas Antonio, 156-158
Walter S., 155-156, 159-160
Bird Woman, 204, 206
Blackborne, Thomas, 192
Blackburn, Moses, 151
Black Hawk, 219-220
Bland, Frances, 112
Mary, 111
Richard, 110
Richard, Jr., 110
Bolling, Jane, 112
Lucy, 108
Bolton and Marshall, 156
Bond, Stephen, 213
Temperance, 213, 216, 222
Booth, Mrs. Alice M., 119-120, 127
Boreman, Margaret, 223
Mary, 223
Offin, 223
Thomas, 223-224
Boswell, Susan, 144
Bowering Isabel, 154
Joseph, 154
William C., 154
Boyd's Marriage Index, 144-145
Bradford, Major William, 237
Brandon, Aaron, 135
Abel, 132
Abigail, 136
Absalom, 136
Alexander, 136-138
Alexander B., 134, 136
Ann, 134
Mrs. Anna Hole, 134
Anna M., 135
Anne, 136
Armstrong, 131-132
Arthur M., 135
Benjamin, 129-134
David, 136
Dorothy A., 135
Elizabeth, 131-136
Elizabeth Locke, 133
Eugene, 135
George, 149-151
George, Jr., 150, 152
George, Sr., 150
Hannah A., 135, 136
James, 131-133, 135, 138
James A., 135-136
James E., 137
James F., 135
James R., 134
James Mabinette, 136
James Robinette, 136-137
Jane, 128-129, 134, 136 138
Job S., 135
John, 132-133, 152, 137-138
John T., 134
Jonathan, 137-138
Joseph, 137-138
Lewis, 136
Margaret, 135
Maria, 135
Mary, 102, 136-138, 150-151
Mary Ann (Maryann, Marian), 150-151
Mary Knox, 129
Noah, 135
Polly, 131, 165-166
Mrs. Rebecca, 132
Retha Belle, 135
Richard, 137-138
Riley M., 134-135
Thomas, 137-138
Walter, 138
William, 132, 136, 138
Zacharia, 135
Brigham, Abigail, 176
family, 176
Gershom, 176
W. I. Tyler, 176
Bronsie, Stephen, 237
Brown, Mrs. Beverly B., 178
John M., 246
Browne, John, 237
Buckland, Asher, 213, 222
Burckhard (Borckert)
Anna Margretha, 226
Elisabeth, 226
Johann, 226
Johann Martin, 226
Johannes, 226
Margreta 225
Burdett (Burdick), Robert, 199-200
Burdick, family, 200
Rebecca, 202
Burgess, Christian, 178, 181
Abram, 179
Chris John, 179
Frederick, 179
George, 178
Hannah, 179
Harrison, 179
Hiram, 179
Horace, 179, 181
John C., 180
John Christian, 178, 181
John Criss John, 178
Melangton W., 179
Philip, 179
Symahia, 179
Rosina, 179
Vierlaty, 179-180
William, Sr., 178-181
Willmer, 178
Burnett, Esther, 204
Fincelious, 206-207
Millie, 206
Butler, Esther, 173
John, 69
Walter, 69

C

Callahan, John, 143
Calvert, Benedict, 106
Charles, 106
Eleanor, 106
Canniff, William, 125
Cannon, George, 114
Canova (Canovas),
Adaline, 232-233
Antonia, 234
Antonio Joseph Venancio, 234
Antonius, 234
Bartolomeo Pedro Martin, 234
Leon J., 232
Carleton, Sir Guy, 69
Carpelan, Baron Tor, 241
Carr, Edson I., 220
Carson, Kit, 158
Carter, Hannah 175
J. Smyth, 73, 188
Lucy, 112
Mary, 175
Thomas, 175
Cary, Anne, 110, 112
Archibald, 112
Cason, Lucy, 194
Seth, 194
Casselman (Castlemann), Adam, 117, 119-120

Alexander C., 68
Anna, 126-127
Anna Elisabetha, 126-127
Anna Margaretha, 124
Anna Maria, 123
C., 117
Caroline, 120
Celia, 119
Cephrenus, 119-120
Capt. Cephrenus, 118-120, 122
Charity, 122
Conrad, 118, 122-123
Dan, 117
Dietrich, 126
Elizabeth, 85, 117, 120, 122
Eva, 120
family, 116-117
G., 117
H. J., 117
Hannah, 122
Hans Dedrick, 85
Hans Dietrick, 126
Henry, 118, 120, 122
Henry S., 122
Johann Dietrich, 126-127
Johann Ludwig, 126
Johann Wilheim, 124-127
John, 118
Lisabeth, 124
Ludwig, 124
M., 117
Margaret, 122
Margaretha, 124
Martinus (Martin S.), 122-123
Mary, 120, 122
Mary Ann, 119-120
Nancy, 120
Peter, 122
Richard, 118
Sally, 120, 122
Severinus, 123-124, 127
Suffrenus, 118, 120, 122
Capt. Suffrenus, 118, 121
Suffrenus, Jr., 118
Thomas, 118
Warner, 118, 122-124
William, 118-123
William, Jr., 124
Chace, Pres. Alvin, 232
W. Henry, 232
William Henry, 233
Chapman, John B., 196
Philip, 194
Charboneau, daughter of, 206
Jean Baptiste, 206-207
Toussaint, 206
Chard, John, 237
Charles, King of Spain, 243
Charles I of England, 87, 106
Charles II of England, 106
Charlot, Suzanne, 92
Chastelux, Elena de, 243
Cheneau, 92
Chester, family, 184
John, 184
Sampson, 184-185
Churchill, John Winston Spencer, 106
Lord Randolph, 106
Sir Winston, 106-107
Cisco, Jay Guy, 103
Clark, General, 207
Pres. J. Reuben, Jr., 239
Rebecca, 167
Clarke, Joseph, 199
Cleveland, Pres. Grover, 108
Coddington, John Insley 183
Colby, Jerusha, 180
Cole, Alice, 83
Benjamin, 86
Harrison, 83, 86
Lois, 86-87
Nelson, 83, 86-87
Nelson Washington, 86-87
Sylvanus, 86
Cook, Col., 204
Edward S., 221
Mrs. Fred H., 165,173-174
George, 122
Cooper, D. M., 216
David, 213, 222
Corderoy, Anna, 182
Cortelyou, Pauline Burgess, 178
Covey, Almira Mack, 217-218, 222
Benjamin, 213, 216, 222
Custis, George Washington Parke Custis, 106
Mary Anne Randolph, 106

D

Dallenbach, 203
Deilebach, Lisabet, 124
De Long, Dr. Irwin H., 177
Deming, Elizabeth, 192
De Witt, Maria (Marytjen), 183
Dial, William, 196
Dibble, Pres. Edwin S., 165
Jane, 165
Dickson, Geduthan, 180
Dillenbach (Dillenbeck, Dilleback, Dillinbeck), Anna Margretha, 85
family, 85
Jerg (Joerg) Martin, 86, 126-127
Johannes, 85
Martin, 85, 126
Sarah Catharina, 85
Daniels, Mrs. Isabel, 213
Davis, Sylvia, 87
De Moss, 83
De Soto, 58
Dillabaugh family, 116
Doak, Thankful, 103
Doddridge, 104
Doran, George, 122
Dort, David, 213, 222
Douglas, Margaret, 106
Drummond, Agnes 106
William Henry, 197
Duncombe, Lettice, 231

E

Eggleston, Joseph D., 93
Egle, William Henry, 136
Elder, Clayborn, 167
David, 167
James, 167
Martha Jane, 167
Eldred (Eldredge, Eldridge), Samuel, 144
Zoeth Skinner, 158
Emig, Anna Margretha, 126
Empson, Elizabeth, 246
William, 246
Endicott, Gov., 199
Engle, Peter, 43
Enos, Irtense Large, 208
Eppes, Mary, 113
Epple, Matthias, 43

F

Fallin, Alice, 142
Charles, 143
William, 143
Faust and Brumbaugh, 85

Ferguson, Robert, 143
Fitzhugh, Henry, 112
William, 112
Fitzroy, Charlotte, 106
Fleming, Alexander, 106
Charles, 106
John, 106, 146
Judith, 106
Tarleton, 182
Ursula, 181
Foote, 91
Nathaniel, 192
Forbes, General, 59
Forquer, D. S., 137
Foster, Sophia M., 179
Frantz Sebastian, 245-246
Freer (Fraer, Frere), Abraham, 183
family, 182
Hugo, 182-183
Nelly (Neeltje, Neeltjen), 182-183
Fremoille, Margarita de la, 243
George de la, 243
Fremont, 158
Friendly, J. H., 154
Fritz, Ernest, 246
Futhey and Cope, 239

G

Gaither, Brian, 152
Gale, Jonathan, 180-181
Lucy, 180-181
Vierlaty, 180-181
Garrett, John, 29
Thomas, 29
Gates, Lydia, 213, 222
Gaylord, Benjamin, 184
Joanna, 183-185
Joseph, 184
Mary, 184
Walter, 185
Geissler, Susanne Dorothea, 202
Genealogical Forum of Portland, Ore., 153
Gibbons, Richard C., 179
Sarah, 237
Gibson, Mr., 96, 98
Godin, Marie, 92
Goode, Mrs., 86
Goodman, Hattie S., 129
Goodwin, William, 108
Graham, James, 138
John, 152
Margaret, 167
Grant, Pres. Heber J., 246
Pres. Ulysses S., 108
Green, Mary, 175
William, 175
Gregory, Tom, 158
Groscat, Daniel, 41
Groscost (Grosecast, Groscast, Groseast, Groskast, Grosscast, Groscross), Ann, 43-44, 176
Charles Arthur, 38
Christena, 40-41
Daniel, 38-44, 176
Elizabeth, 40
Harry Elmer, 41
Jacob, 38-40, 42, 176
Jacob Wesley, 41
Jesse B., 35, 38, 40-41, 44
John, 38-44, 176
John, Jr., 44
Magdalena, 42, 176
Mary, 35, 40
Philip, 40
Susannah, 40, 42, 176
Grosecup, Paul, 38
Groscop, John, 38
Groskopf, Margaret, 38
Grosgus, Jacob, 177
Grymes, Lucy, 111-112

H

Hall, Alexander, 103
James, 96-98
John, 100
John A., 103
Martha, 103
Mary, 103
Mary Brandon Alexander, 102-103
Prudence, 100
Richard A., 103
Thankful Doak, 95, 100, 102
Thankful J., 103
Gov. William, 95-103
portrait, 97
Major William, 95, 98-100
Judge William H., 103
Hamilton, Claud, 106
Margaret, 106
Handschue, Pastor, 177
Hanes, Henry, 37
Hardin, Jack, 52
Capt. John, 51
Major John, 51-53, 76
Mark, 51
Martin, 51
Stephen, 53
William, 52
Harney, Jane G., 167
Harrison, Benjamin, 112
Elizabeth, 112
Mr., 98
Hatch, Rufus, 213, 222
Hathaway, Daniel, 156
Haus (Hauss, House, Houys)
Anna, 224-225
Anna Barbara, 225, 228
Christian, 227
Conrad, 227
Elias, 227
family, 226-227
George, 227
Herman, 226-228
Johannes, 227
John Christian, 227
Nancy, 224
Peter, 227
Reinhard, 227
Haynes, Jane, 169
Haynie, James, 167
Jane Graham, 167
Hayward, Martha, 164
Hebard, Dr. Grace Raymond, 206
Heckney, Sally, 120
Henderson, Archibald, 58
Hening's Statutes at Large, 146
Henry IV of France, 88
Herman, Ephraim August, 189
Hicken, Verda, 216
Hickerson, Mr., 99-100
Hickey, 122
Higginson, Millie Burnett, 206
Hilbig, Frederick Walter, 204
Hils, see Huls
Hinckley, Alonzo A., 107
Gordon B., 107
Gov. Thomas, 237
Hofer, Frederica W. L., 200-201
Barbara Mirus, 200-201
Hole, Anna, 134
Zacharia, 134, 136
Holman, Thomas, 152
Ho-no-ne-gah (Mary), 213, 219-220
Horne, Esther Burnett, 204, 206-207
Hough, Emerson, 56, 63
Houston, Gov. Sam, 101
Huguenot refugees, 87-93
Hulin, William, 220

Hull, General, 214
Huls (Hils), Maria Magdalena, 38, 231
Hunt, Ephraim, 237
Capt. Jefferson, 162
John, 162
Miss, 192-193
Nicholas, 191, 193
Richard, 192
Hunter, Gov., 228
Hutcheson, George, 246
Hutt, Gertrude L. Weegar, 119
Otho A., 119
Mrs. Otho A., 119-120, 122

I

Isaiah, 67
Isham, Anne, 113
Henry, 108, 113
Henry de., 108
Mary, 108-114

J

Jackson, Gen. Andrew, 51, 101
James IV of Scotland, 106-107
James V of Scotland, 106
James VI of Scotland, 106
Jamieson, Elvira, 213, 222
Jefferson, Martha, 110
Peter, 110
Pres. Thomas, 110-114
Jenkins, Martha, 162
"Jerk Meat," 206
Johnson, Fanny, 164
James, 164
Sir John, 69-70, 123-124
Moody, 164
Sir William, 69, 124
Jones, Alonzo, 179
Jordan, David Starr, 66
Joseph in Egypt, 188-189
Judah, S. B., 131

K

Kaputzgi (Caputzgin, Caputzgi, Kaputzgin)
Anna Dorothea, 127
Anna Magdalena, 127
Anna Margretha, 127, 246
Jacob, 127
Johann Jacob, 127, 246
Veltin, 127
Karr, John, 150-151
Keeny, Maria A., 213
Keith, Mary, 106
Mary Isham, 106, 110
Kellogg, Elisha, 156
Jason, 154
Orren, 156
Kelly, Thomas, 154
Kenney, Rachel, 181
Kershner, Nathaniel, 135
Klein, Amilia, 226
Kinsman, Robert, Jr., 223
Knight, Newel, 61
Knittle, Walter Allen, 230
Knott, Procter, 48
Knox, family, 129
Jeannette, 132
John, 129-130
Mary, 129-130, 133
Kocherthal, Rev. Joshua, 126, 226-227
Koehler, Ernst, 177

L

Lackland, Jean, 151
Large, Shadrack James, 207
Lauperswil Village and Church, 84
Leach, Margaret Isabelle, 170
Lee, Charlotte, 106
Gen. Fitzhugh, 111
Henry, 111
Gen. Henry, 108, 111
Gen. Robert E., 106-108, 110-113
Gen. William Henry Fitzhugh, 111
Lein, Anna Dorothea, 178
Lewis, Norman, 187
Lewis and Clark, 62, 204, 206
Little Night-Cap, 89, 91
Little Owl, 98
Locke, Mrs. Elizabeth, 133
John, 133
Loomis, Joseph, 107
Louis XIV of France, 88
Luckey, Samuel, 170
Lued, Johann Leonard, 126
Lyman, George, 179
Lynnam, Richard, 237

Mc

McAdan, Rev. Hugh, 133
McBride, Daniel, 194
McCorkle, Eliza, 132
Joseph, 132
McDaniel, Miss S. W., 103
McGrady (M'Gready), Margaret, 167, 169-170
McGuire, John, 150-152, 165-166, 171
Mary, 171
Sarah, 165-166, 170, 173
McIntire, Margaretta Jane, 179

M

Mabinette, Elizabeth, 136
MacArthur, Gen. Douglas, 107
Macauley, Mary, 172
Macintosh, John S., 47
Mack, Achsah, 213, 222
Almira, 213, 216, 222
Col. Almon, 213, 221-222
Caroline E. (Carrie), 220-221
Edward, 221
Fanny, 213
Harriet, 213, 216, 222
Henry, 221
John, 34, 36
John Mudget, 213
Louisa, I., 221
Lovica, 213, 222
Lovina, 213, 222
Mary (Polly), 213, 222
Mary F., 221
Matilda, 221
Rhoda, 213, 222
Rosa, 221
Ruth, 213, 222
Solomon, 73, 213, 222
Stephen, 213-216, 218, 221-222
Stephen, Jr., 213, 219-222
Temperance Bond, 216
Thomas, 221
William, 221
Mackenzie, Mr., 232
MacWethy, Lou D., 126
Mandel, Susannah 202
Marr, Catharine, 51
Marshall, Chief Justice John, 106-107, 110-111, 113
Col. Thomas, 110
Martin, Alex, 152

Anne, 92
Martinez, Francisca Ignatia, 156
Mary, Queen of Scots, 106
Maspratt (Muspratt), Edith, 240
Matlick, John, 137
Mead, Abigail, 194
Enos, 194
Gideon, 194
John, 193
Jonathan, 193-194
Jonathan, Jr., 194
Melasen, 194
Spencer P. 193
William, 193
Merkley (Markley, Merckle, Merkle, Marcley), Bill, 120
Catherine, 117
Christopher Friedrich, 245-246
Emma, 119-120
Emma C., 117
family, 116-117, 245
family tree, 117
Jacob, 37-38, 117, 231, 245
Jacob J., 122
Mary, 117, 120
Michael, 117, 246
Sally, 117
Dr. Stanley A., 117
Merrill, Mrs. Eunice Weegar, 119
Joseph F., 107
Mestre, Bartolome, 234
Catalina, 234
Peter, 234
Michaux, Abraham, 87, 90-93
Abraham, Jr., 93
Ann Madlin, 93
Anne, 93
Easter Mary, 93
Elizabeth, 93
Isaac, 93
Jacques, 92-93
Jacob, 92-93
Jane Magdalen, 93
Jean, 93
John 93
John Paul, 94
Olive Judi, 93
pedigree, 92
Susanna, 93
Susanne Rochet, 93-94
Miller, Esther, 87
Mrs. Mary Lou, 170, 173
Richard Williams, 170
Mirus, August Martin, 202
Barbara, 200-201
family, 202
Johann Christian Gottlob, 202
Martin, 202
Dr. Phil Leon, 202
Montgomerie, Alexander, 106
Catherine, 106
Hugh, 106
Margaret, 106
Montgomery, James, 167
Martha Louisa, 167
Moore, 101
Michael, 120
Morgan, Mr., 100
Mortson, Mrs. Harrieit E., 85, 87
Mueller, Philip, 126
Muhlenberg, Rev. Henry Melchior, 177
Mumbert, Michael, 150-151

N

Neale, George, 190, 193
Neibaur, Alexander, 27
Neide (Niedy, Nidey), Abraham, 189
Abraham, Sr., 189
Ann(a), 189
Joseph, 189
Michael, 189
Nelles, Milo, 228
Nelson, Gov. Thomas, 112
Newberry, Arthur F,, 221
Mrs. Carrie Mack, 220
Newland (Newlan), Anthony, 180
Benjamin, 180
Hannah, 178-180
John, 180
Patience, 180
Sarah, 180
Nichols, Lois Cole, 86-87
Nicholson, John, 131

O

Offing, Margaret, 224
Ogg Frederic Austin, 60, 64
O'Hara, 56
Onate, 244
Oregon Donation Land Claims, 153-154
O'Reilly, Miguel, 234
Ortega, Jose Quintin, 156
Osborn, A. O., 171
O'Shaugnessy, Michael, 120
Overton, B. B., 152

P

Palatines, 68-73, 227-231
Palmer, William, 199
Papworth, Pres. Royle S., 218
Paul, Prince of Wurtemberg, 207
Payne, Mrs. Katherine Miller Bell, 170
Peacock, Andrew Johnson, 208-209
Elmo Belmiro, 208, 210
Lucille, 208
Pedro, Don, de Mendoza, 243
Penn, Richard, 151
Thomas, 151
Peralta, Gabriel, 157
Juan Jose, 157
Maria Gertrudes, 157
Peterson, Celestia Terry, 14-16
family, 212
Peter, 14-16
Phillips, James, 153
Plant, James, 194
Pleasants, James, 110
James, Jr., 110
John Hampden, 110
Poirie, Antoine, 92
Ponce de Leon, 58
Porter, John, 107-108, 183, 185
Post, Esther Miller, 87
Harriet, 86-87
Martin, 87
Pulsipher, Almira, 179, 181
Marriah, 179
Pycroft, Samuel, 145
Pyle (Pile), John, 240
Mary, 240
Nicholas, 239-240
Ralph, 239-240
Robert, 238-239
Robert, Jr., 239

R

Rader, Archibald, 154
Ragland, R. W., 195
Ramsey, 101

Randolph, Anne, 110, 112
Beverley, 108
Edmund, 108, 111
Elizabeth, 110
George Wythe, 110
Isham, 110
Jane, 110
John, 111-112
John of Roanoke, 112
Mary, 112-113
Mary Isham, 106
Col. Peter, 108
Peyton, 111
Richard, 112
Thomas Jefferson, 110
Thomas Mann, 110, 112
Col. William, 108
Reeder, Adolph M., 204
Reid, Hannah, 130
W. D. 120
Reynolds, 200
Richards, Alice, 236-238
Anne (Annie), 236-237
Christopher, 237
Dorothy, 237
Hannah, 237
James, 236-239
Joan (e), 236-239
John, 236-238
Marie, 237
Mary, 236-238
Susanna, 238
Thomas, 107, 236-238
Tomasin, 237
Welthian, 236-237
Tomasin, 237
Welthian, 236-237
William, 236, 238
Richter, Andreas, 226
Anna Maria, 226
Ridavetts, Agatha, 234
Juana, 234
Riddle, Ann, 43-44
Anna Margaret, 43
Catharina, 43
Christina, 43
Dominicus, 43, 176
John, 43
Susanna, 43
Robertson, General, 98
Lloyd J., 85
Marjorie A., 83, 86
Robinette, Elizabeth, 136
James, 137
Joseph, 137
Samuel, 137
Robins, John, 191
Rochet, Jeanne, 93
Jean, 87-90, 93
Marie Trufet, 87-89, 92
Susanne, 87, 89-94
Thiery, 92
Thomas, 92
Rodger (Roger), Antonia, 234
Maria, 234
Rolfe, Agnes or Ann, 144
Rondeau Suzanne, 92
Roosevelt, Franklin D., 107
Roselli, Bruno, 234
Rowley, Bethia, 183
Mary, 35
Moses, 4th, 34-35
Royall (Royal, Ryal), Henry, 113
John, 113
Joseph, 113
Capt. Joseph, 113
Noah, 114
Paul, 114
William, 113
Rucker, Sarah, 165
Rudolph, Casper, 154
Labot, 154
Mary, 154
Morgan, 154
Rumple, Dr., 131
Rutherford, Anne, 106

S

Sacajawea, 204-208
sister of, 207
St. Simon, Marie de, 243
Salazar, Coat of Arms, 243
Eufemio, 242, 244-246
family, 242-244
Francisco. de, 243
Guadalupe, 242
Hector Enrique de, 243
Jean de, 243
Juan de, 243-244
Saltzmann (Salsman, Saltmann, Salzmann), Amalie, 127
Anna Margretha, 124-127
Georg, 127, 246
Henrich, 124
Margreta, 124
Samon Richard, 190
Saunders, Tobias, 199-200
Scadden, Eliza, 236, 238
Schaeffer, Elisabetha, 126
Justus Henrich, 126
Maria Margretha, 126
V. W., 154
Schaffer (Schafer, Scheefer Sheffer, Shafer, Shaver), Adam, 37-38, 231
Anna, 134
family, 116-118
George, 150
Gerhardt. 229-231
Job M., 134
Johannes, 38, 231
John, 35-37, 134, 150, 231, 245
Maria, 38, 231
Scheff, William, 228
Schettler, Josephine, 153
Paul A., 152-153
Schuyler, Peter, 69
Schwab (Swope), Dorothe, 177
Dorothea. 178
Johannes, 178
Schwerdtfeger (Schwerdfeger), Anna Dorothea, 177
Rev. Johann Samuel, 177-178
Rev. Samuel, 73, 121
Scotch-Irish frontiersmen, 47-50
Scott, Sir Walter, 105-107
Serignon, Elisabeth de, 92
Jean de, 92
Seton, Alexander, 106
Severin, Anne, 92
family, 91-92
Nicholas, 92
Paul, 92
Shallas (Shollas), Ketrin (Katherine), 177
Madlena, 177
Susanna, 177
Theobald, 42-43, 176-177
Sheldon, William Arthur, 144
Shepherd, John, 208
Martha Jane, 208
Simmendinger Register, 227
Ulrich, 226, 228
Simmons, William, 154
Sinclair, Anne, 106
Skillington, Florence E., 183
Smith, Amanda Barnes, 163-164

Joseph, 218
Joseph, Jr., 64, 107
Lucy, 218
Thomas, 184
Z. F., 56
Snocke, Clement, 236, 238
Snow, Abigail, 176
Erastus, 175
John, 175-176
Pres. Lorenzo, 107
May, 181
Richard, 175-176
Zerubbabel, 176
Sommer, Rev. Peter Nicholas, 124, 228
Spaulding, Marjorie A., 85
Stanley, Benjamin, 213, 222
Stata, 120
Philip, 122
Stebbins (Stebbing), Edward, 183-185
Frances, 183-185
genealogy, 184
Mary, 183, 185
Stephens, James B., 154
Stewart, Alexander, 106
George, 106
Janet, 106
John, 106
Katherine, 106
Margaret, 106
Stimmel, Peter, 43
Stockwell, Abraham, 180-181
Ashley, 180
Rachael, 180-181
Vierlaty, 180-181
Vilate, 181
Violet (Violette), 178, 180-181
Stovey, Ann, 239
William, 239
Straughan, David, 142
Surnames, variations in spelling, 197-198
Sutz (Sitts, Sis), Amilia, 226
Andreas, 226
Anna Margreth, 226
Baldwin, 224
Balthasar (Baltus), 224-225
Elisabeth, 226
Johann Dietrich, 226
Johann Peter, 226
Magdalena, 226
Mary, 224-225, 228
Peter, 225-226
Swinton, Jean, 106
Swope (see Schwab)

T

Taft, Senator Robert A., 238
Pres. William Howard, 238
Tanner, John, 114
Tarleton, Judith, 181
Susanna, 182
Temple, Lucy, 181
Terrill, Isaac, 221
Terry, Charles, 16
Thorne, Joan 236, 238
Tillapaugh, Elizabeth (Betsy), 83, 86-87
Tills, Elizabeth, 144-145, 224
Tomes (Toms), Alice, 191, 193
Giles, 190, 193
John, 191, 193
Torry, Philip, 236-238
William, 236
Tough, Family, 183
Frances, 183-185
Ralph, 183-184
Trigg, Aunt Mattie, 209
Edward Saunders, 208-209
Lockie Narcissa, 208-209
Martha Jane Shepherd, 208-209
Trudeau, Jean Baptiste, 197
Truffet (Trufet), Jacques, 93
Marie, 87-89, 92
Tulles, Mary, 142
Turnbull, Andrew, 234-235
colony, 234-235
Twitchell, Bernice Burnett, 204
George, 204

U

Uncle Eli, 17
Uncle Tom, 18
United Empire Loyalists, 36, 68-70, 118, 120, 124-125

V

Vancleave, John, 152
Van Doren, 120
Van Hoff, Anna Maria, 229
Van Orman, family, 117
Venz, Antonia, 234
Vierling, Eva, 202
Vinson, James, 195

W

Wallrad (Wallrath), Adam, 225
Anna Barbara, 225
Christina, 228
family, 229
Gerhard(t), 228
Hendrick (Heinrich), 228
Maria, 228
Maria Margretha, 225, 228-229
Warren, Mehitable, 176
Washington, Gen. Geo., 24, 26, 111-112
Waterhole, John B., 197
Waters, Henry F., 224
Weaver, Lucius Egbert, 194
Weegar, Eunice, 119
Gertrude L., 119
Henry Beek, 119
Henry W., 119
Michael, 119-120
Weiser, John Conrad, 228-229
Weiss, Pasteur U., 91
Wells (Welles), Albert 192
Alice 191, 193
Anne, 191, 193
Pres. Daniel H., 193
Gov. Heber M., 193
Johan, 191
John, 190-193
Joseph, 193
Junius F., 192
Lemuel Aiken, 193
Mary, 191
Robert, 190-193
Samuel. 191
Sara, 192
Gov. Thomas, 190-193
Wentes. Anna. 202
White, Anna. 107-108
Bridget, 108
Elizabeth, 108
Mary, 107
Robert, 107-108
Stephen, 167, 169, 173
Whitmer. David, 218
Whittemore, Gideon

Olin, 213, 222
Harriet Mack, 216-217, 222
John Richard, 213, 222
Wilcox, Capt. Hazard, 26-27
Wilson, Jane, 132
Winchester, Gen. James, 103
Windrow, Andrew, 203
Jacob, 203
John, 203
Kata (Catherine), 203
Margrat, 203
Mary, 203
Philip Henerck, 203
Winter (see also Windrow),
Andrew, 203
Kata (Catherine), 203
Mary, 203
Winters, Augusta, 202
Hiram, 202
Rebecca, 202
Winthrop, Elizabeth, 237
Woodard (Woodward),
Ezekial, 180
Patience, 180
Sarah, 180
Woodruff (Woodroofe),
Sir David, 231-232
genealogy, 231-232
Matthew, 231-232
Norris, 232
Robert, 231
Pres. Wilford, 193
Woodson, Fleming, 181
John, 181
Tarleton, 181
Wright, Elizabeth, 246
Joshua, 246
Wunderlich (see also Mirus),
Adam, 202
Urban, 202

Y

Yemmons, Mary, 213
Young, Pres. Brigham, 27, 65
John, 186
Michael (Mickie), 186-188
Mrs. 186, 188

Z

Zaam, Anna Catharina, 182
Catharina, 182
Zewadski, John Hermon, 232
Julia Eoline, 232
Ziegenhagen, Dr., 177
Zipperlin, Johann Fredrich, 127
Zoller, Anna Maria, 231
Zundel. Mae Bell, 166-167
Zuvelt (Zufeld, Zufelt, Zoufeld, Schufeldt, Schoefelt),
Adam, 182-183
Anna Margretha, 182
Anthony (Theunis), 182-183
Jurg, 182
Margriet. 182
Neeltje, 182

$2.75

ADVANCED GENEALOGICAL RESEARCH

About the Author

For three decades (since his appointment as secretary of the Genealogical Society in 1928) the name of Archibald F. Bennett has been synonymous with genealogical research in the Church. Born in Dingle, Idaho, he grew to maturity in the LDS colonies of Alberta, Canada. There he interrupted a teaching career by enlisting in the 13th Overseas Mounted Rifles of the Canadian Army during World War I, having many testimonies of divine protection while serving there and later in the Fort Garry Horse, Canadian Cavalry Brigade. He returned to his Canadian home in June 1919 and to teaching high school at Taber and at the old Knight Academy at Raymond. He moved to Salt Lake City in June 1922, there continuing his education at the University of Utah, receiving his B. A. and M. A. degrees in 1925 and 1926. He has traveled extensively in North America and Europe gathering genealogical records for the Church. He has served since August 1940 as a member of the General Board of the Deseret Sunday School Union. He and Mrs. Bennett are the parents of five grown children.

BOOKCRAFT, INC.
Salt Lake City, Utah